

# A Pack of Their Own

## I watched as we were driving away to go park 51

[ 1,329 words ]

“Because I would like to see some of my family come here for once. And it would be rude not to include the royals, even

if they don't come, it would still be rude not to include them. And if they don't come that's less people/wolves to

contend with.” “Remember Carson wanted to go over some packs with us, as well.” “I remember, if they are not on the

list then we can remove some that we have to add the ones he wants.” “Ok.” I get a link from Sarah that it's time for

dinner. “It's dinner time we will finish this tomorrow.”

CARSON: Lilly, Calen, and I get home in time to get things wrapped for Keska's birthday tomorrow and get freshened up

for dinner. I even made sure that I bought two phones, one for Keska, and one for Mackie. I invite them both to the pack

house to have dinner with the rest of us. “I think I will, I need to ask the Alpha a favor.” Calen says. “What's that?” I ask

him. “My grand pup Karen wants to come visit, but it will be during the week of the ball.” He says. “I wouldn't think it to

be a problem, as she will be staying with you here right?” I asked him. “Yes.” “Lilly how about you?” I enquired “I believe I will join you as well, I just need to let Stephen know.” “I don't mean to pry, but why?” She smiles at me. “He was assigned

to me from my family after my mate passed, I guard the family secret. And they want to make sure I am taken care of.”

She says. There is no need for us to ask what secret, we both know who Lilly is, and what she is capable of.

LILLY: I link Stephen. \*"I am home, but I am going to go up to the pack house with Carson and Calen to have dinner with

everyone, please come join us." "Do you wish me to drive?" "No, we can walk back." "Ok thank you miss Lilly I will join

you."\* I then link Carla to let her know we are coming for dinner. We leave Calen's house and head to the pack house.

When we get there I notice that Keska is antsy and can't seem to be still. I link her. \*"Are you all right?" "No Nana, I just

can't seem to calm down, I feel a little itchy which is new, I haven't slept well for the last two nights, do you think I might

be addicted to the pain meds?" "No dear I don't think that I believe that it's because you are so used to being active and

now you are forced into being inactive that you are feeling this way." "Well, I hate it, what can I do?" "We will go for a

long walk after dinner ok. That should help." "Ok, can Mackie come with?" "Yes dear she can come with." \*

KESKA: Everyone sits down for dinner; I am so antsy I can barely contain myself; I feel the itchiness getting worse. Then

the conversation turns to the investigation. "Kes what do you remember from the attack?" Father asked me. "I had 3

people near me, the one that grabbed me from behind, with a hand over my mouth, the one that stabbed me, and one

other that was blocking me in, so I couldn't run, they all had black hooded sweatshirts on that covered most of their face,

and there was this odd smell with all three of them, like they plastered themselves in mud, so they all smelled the same."

I said, "Anything else at all, height, scars, tat's." "I know that the one that grabbed me may have been around Frank's

height, because he picked me up by my neck, the bruises have faded some but there is still a bit of the imprint is still

visible." And I lift my head up and show my neck. "I will have to talk to Dr. Grant, about something, but that will have to wait until tomorrow." Father says. "Enough talk about the attack please?" mom asked, "Of course dear." Father says to

her. "What do you want for breakfast in the morning Keska?" mom asked me. "egg cakes, bacon, sausage and scrambled

eggs." I say. "What are egg cakes?" Uncle Carson asked, "They are like pancakes, but they have extra eggs in them, so

they aren't as thick as a pancake, more like a thicker crepe." I tell him. "Where or how did you come up with that idea?"

"Mackie and I were experimenting, we wanted something similar to pigs in a blanket, but the blanket was too thick, so we thinned it down by adding extra eggs to the batter." I tell him. "Alpha I have a favor to ask of you." Calen said. "Ask

away." "My grand pup wishes to come for a visit, but it will be during the ball." He says. "I have no problem with that, just

please have her bring two formal dresses, as she will need them, for the festivities." Father says. "Thank you Alpha." The

rest of dinner goes by amiably.

LILLY: After dinner I stated to everyone present that I was taking Keska for a good long walk. "Mind her stitches mother."

Carla said to me. "Don't worry dear I think I can manage her." I said. "Link Mickie and have her meet us out front." I tell

Keska. I watch her eyes glaze over, so I know she is doing what I asked. "Can I come too?" Liam asked. "Of course, dear." I

said to him. We leave the house. Stephen, Liam, Keska, and I, Mackie is outside waiting. "Now here is the route we will

take, we will head toward the school, then cut back across the football field, head toward the lake and come back up on

the back side of the pack house, that should be enough of a walk to let you be able to sleep tonight." I told Kes. "Thank

you Nana." And we set off.

KESKA: By the time we got back from the walk that Nana had set for us, I was tired, and it was time for bed. "Want to stay

I asked Mackie. "Sure." We both said good night to Nana and Stephen, and headed inside and up to bed. I actually fell

asleep as soon as my head hit my pillow. \*(HEY KESKA WAKE UP!)\* "Huh?" \*(WAKE UP GIRL, WE NEED TO GO OUTSIDE.)\*

"What? Why?" \*(BECAUSE I NEED TO SHIFT.)\* "It's too early I'm only 16 we don't shift until 18." \*(WELL, I AM GOING TO

SHIFT, SO GET YOUR BUTT UP AND GET US OUTSIDE.)\* "For goddess sake bossy much?" \*(NOT UNLESS I HAVE TO BE.

I'M CORLA BY THE WAY.)\* "Nice to meet you." I get up and head downstairs and out the back door. I feel exhausted by

the time get outside, I fall to the ground as I am in pain, I thought getting stabbed was bad, that has nothing on this

pain. I can feel every bone in my body breaking one by one, shifting, reforming and knitting back together. Finally, it's

done. I stand up on four shaky legs.

MACKIE: I hear Kes rolling around on her bed like she is in pain, I was about to get up to make sure she was alright when

she got up and went downstairs, I followed her, and when she fell to the ground I started forward and then I heard the

sound of breaking bones, I am not going to lie I am scared out of my wits, I link Nana, \*"Nana Something is happening

with Kes!"\* I practically shout at her. \*"Mackie! No need to shout in my head like that."\* She scolds. \*"I am sorry Nana,

but something is happening with Kes, I think she might be shifting."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## I watched as we were driving away to go park 52

[ 1,312 words ]

\*“It’s too early for her to shift.” “I know, but I think she is.” “On my way.”\* I close the link and just watch. Nana gets there

at the very end of Kes’s shift.

LILLY: That was crazy. I get up and I get Stephen up, “we need to go to the pack house Mackie thinks Keska is shifting.” I

tell him. We both get dressed and head to the pack house. Mackie was right Keska shifted, but what I saw in front of me was no ordinary wolf. She had a shimmery watery outline to her, kind of like the heat waves coming off a hot highway in

the middle of summer, and she was a red wolf. “What is she?” Mackie asked, “I have never seen any wolf like that before.”

“I am not 100% sure but my instincts are telling me she is an elemental phase wolf.” “A what?” “Mackie, Sshh, do not

startle her, her bite could be deadly.” I say.

KESKA/CORLA: I hear them talking about me. I turn to look at them, and make my way over to them. \*(“IS WHAT NANA

SAID TRUE”) (“YES.”) (“YOU DON’T PLAN ON BITING THEM I HOPE!”) (“CALM DOWN, NANA IS IMMUNE AND IF I ONLY NIP MACKIE SHE WILL GET SICK BUT THEN SHE WILL BE IMMUNE.”)\* We brush up against Nana and then Mackie, and

Stephen. \*(“WE ARE GOING FOR A RUN; WE HAVE BEEN COUPED UP TO LONG.”)\* We link the both of them together, meaning that in both ways, both Corla and I are speaking through the link to both of them. Then we turn and take off. I

let her take the lead on where she wanted to go. We headed to the Western border. Then all of a sudden I get this

strange sensation wash over me, and the next thing I know, we are stalking Brent Charter, Corla leaps and bites him in the

butt. He doesn’t have time to cry out, he just freezes like a statue made of ice. \*(“CORLA WHAT DID YOU JUST DO?”)

("HE HURT US.")\* is all I get from her. Then the strange sensation comes again, and I see we are stalking Ronnie

Briginhall. Again, she leaps and bites him in the back of the leg, and again he doesn't have time to cry out and he is left

as a pile of ash. \*("LET ME GUESS, HE HURT US TOO?") ("YES.") ("BUT HOW DO YOU KNOW IT WAS THEM?") ("I

SMELLED THEM, I REMEMBERED.") ("GREAT BUT HOW AM I GOING TO EXPLAIN THIS TO FATHER?") ("NOT GOING TO

EXPLAIN, DON'T CARE.")\* I shake my head at her.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

MACKIE: My best friend just shifted into a wolf I have never seen before. "What is she Nana?" "Like I said I am not 100%

sure, but I believe that she is an elemental phase wolf." "What dose that even mean?" "She has the ability to control an

element like water, or fire." "Can she make it, I mean like call it forth, like in the stories of witches?" "No, she can't conjure

the element she controls the element. She may nip you Mackie, don't worry a nip won't kill you, it will however make you

sick, but when you recover you will be immune to her bite." Nana tells me. "She was soft, I have never felt a wolf that

soft, I can't even describe anything to compare her to, she is so soft." "Yes she is." "Ok, so say she is this elemental phase wolf, how is she that?" "My mate was a phase elemental, he was able to actually turn himself into the element, not just

control it." "Will she heal? Like all wolves do?" "Yes dear, she probably doesn't have to worry about taking it easy now."

"What about the color of her wolf, I have never seen a red wolf before, is it part of being this elemental phase thing?" "It may, I don't know for sure, we will just have to wait and see." Nana tells me. "Do we need to keep her a secret?" "I think we should for now anyway. Go get her a robe to put on when she gets back and shifts back, she will be naked."

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

KESKA: \*(“IT’S TIME TO HEAD BACK TO THE PACK HOUSE CORLA, BEFORE WE END UP SHIFTING BACK AND I HAVE TO WALK BACK NAKED.”) (“OK.”)\* She turns and heads back east towards home. We get back and she just drops to the

ground, and I feel this push and then I am me again. We get back and she just drops to the ground, and I feel this push

and then I am me again, there was no pain, just a push feeling. I don’t understand half of what just happened to me, and

I know that most of it isn’t normal. Mackie, Nana and Stephen are still here waiting for me. Mackie has one of my robes

for me too. \*“(Nana, Corla just killed two wolves.”)\* I linked to her. \*“(Did she tell you why?” “Just that they hurt us, and yes

she said us, not me, us.” “Dear I believe that you are a very unique hybrid, Corla is more than just the beast that most of

us have, she is the elements of your body, your heart, pumps blood and keeps you warm she is the heat, the water that

runs through our body to keep our muscles moist and pliable, she is that water, so she is more than just the wolf.”\* That

is a lot to take in, and I am exhausted I just want my bed. “Bed” is all I can get out. “Stephen please help get her up to

her room, Mackie will show you where to go, I will wait here for you.” Nana says.

DRAKE: I feel this harsh pain in my chest and shoulders, it wakes me from a deep sleep. (“We just lost two pack

members”) Helios tells me. (“Was it rouges”) I ask him. (“I did not feel a perimeter breach.”) he tells me. I link the guard

on duty. “I want a full roll call of every guard on patrol, and the Schule and route each patrol was on, when they come in,

and any statements of events that went on during their patrol and I want it on my desk in the morning.” “Yes Alpha.” I

close the link and go back to sleep. I will deal with it in the morning.

KESKA: Wednesday, my birthday, I'm 16 today yeah! Except my wolf killed two others last night, well technically this morning I look at the clock it was 9:30 already, I never sleep this late. But I guess with it being my birthday and with the

shifting and all, they let me sleep, not that anyone besides Mackie, Nana, and Stephen know about the shifting. I link

Mackie "Hey, you here?" "Yeah, downstairs in the kitchen" "I'll be down in 10 minutes." I close the link. Go to my on suite

take a quick shower, towel off and get dressed in jean shorts and a light green crop top with my cross trainers and head

downstairs. "Morning Sarah, morning Mackie." I say as I enter the kitchen "Morning lazy head." Sarah says back. As she

puts a plate down in front of me with the egg cakes, bacon, sausage, and scrambled eggs on it. I am famished, I didn't

realize that shifting would take that much energy. "Hey, Nana said we need to keep you a secret for now." Mackie linked me. "Ok." I send back. "I feel good this morning maybe I could try some target practice." I state out loud. "Not until you

get checked out by Dr. Grant, He will be by before lunch." Mom says as she comes into the kitchen.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **- I watched as we were driving away to go park 53**

### **I watched as we were driving away to go park 53**

[ 1,247 words ]

“I hate this, I feel like I can’t do anything.” I say to her. “I know it feels that way right now, but you have to let your body

heal.” “When you are done with breakfast maybe you and Mackie can help with the invitations for the ball.” I look at

Mackie and she nods, “Ok mom.” I say.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

DRAKE: First thing in the morning I link my Gamma, “Chris, I need you to come to my office asap.” “Yes Alpha.” I close the

link; I know it’s early, but I need answers. It’s 6:30 but I can’t sleep anymore, and I have business to get to. I go to our on

suite and get cleaned up. Come back into our room and start getting dressed, and see that Carla is awake. “Morning my

beautiful mate.” And come over and kiss her. “Come back to bed Drake.” “As much as I would love to accommodate that

request my dear, I can’t, we had an incident last night at some point in time, and lost two wolves, how or why I don’t

know, but I need to find out why. Plus, I need to talk to Dr. Grant about the burse on Keska’s neck, maybe it will give us a

clue to find who stabbed her.” “And I believe Alpha Camron’s people are coming for the first shipment today. And we

have to settle the list for the ball and find out who Carson wants to add or take off.”  
“Marcus should have the report I

asked for by now, so I have to get to my office.” I tell her as I kiss her and give her boob  
a squeeze. “Tease.” She calls

after me as I leave the room. \* “Dr. Grant will be here before lunch to check on Keska’s  
stitches so you can talk to him

then.”\* Carla links me as I am leaving our quarters.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

KESKA: I send a quick link to Nana. \* “Nana, Dr. Grant will be here before lunch and if I  
am healed, what do I tell him?”

“The truth sweetie, that you shifted, he may ask you to do it again but say that you are  
still tired from doing it this morning that should help take the pressure off some.” “Ok  
thank you Nana.”\* I was about to close the link when she

asked, \* “When are we going to have cake and celebrate your birthday?” “I don’t know,  
no one has said anything to me,

so if it is up to me, I say we can all gather after lunch, as we will all be here anyway.  
And I doubt there will be cake,

cookies yeah, because I made some yesterday, but I doubt the cake.” \* I send back to  
her then close the link.

LILLY: After that link from Keska, I open a link to Carson and Calen. \* “Remember what I  
told you yesterday, about Keska’s

birthday? Well, they have done it again, and they are even home for it this year, so bring the gifts with you when we go

for lunch.”\* I close the link and go to get ready to head to the pack house, so that I will be there when the Doctor shows

up.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

DRAKE: I get to my office to find both Chris and Marcus waiting for me. “Gentlemen come in, Chris you will need to hear

what Marcus has to say this morning, as Greg is out with the twins, I need you to help take this issue on.” I tell them as I

open my office, and we all walk in. “So, Marcus what have you got for me.” “It’s unusual to say the least Alpha, I did the

roll call as you asked and we are missing two people Brent Charter, and Ronnie Briginhall, I did send two men out to

investigate what happened and what they told me was very strange. Alpha, very strange indeed.” He says. “Please just

get to the point Marcus.” “Well sir, Brent is an ice statue and no I am not kidding, he looks like someone carved his exact

likeness out of ice.” He took out his phone and showed a picture of the statue. “Then about 5 feet from the ice statue we

found a pile of ash, we found a couple of teeth in it and sent them to be tested, we put a rush on it, and we should have

those results in a half hour." "Did you move anything other than to get the teeth?" "No sir, we thought that you would want to see it for yourself Alpha." "I may, but right now I want you to show Gamma Chris, as Beta Greg is busy right

now." "Yes Alpha." I link Mitchell. "Mitchell, I need you to come to my office please and bring everything we have on

Keska's stabbing." "Yes Alpha." I close the link, "I just asked Mitchell to come, and bring the file from Keska's stabbing, I

have a feeling that the two people we lost may have been the ones that stabbed her. But then that begs the question of

what happened to them?" "Marcus please show Chris where everything happened and find Darius and take him with as well, he might be able to read any tracks that may have been left." They both answer with "Yes Alpha." And left my office.

About 10 minutes later Mitchell knocks on my door. "Come." I call out. "You wished to see me, Alpha?" Mitchell asked,

"Yes Mitchell come in and close the door." I tell him. "We had an incident last night, and lost two people, and I believe

that they were responsible for Keska's stabbing, even though we weren't able to prove it, I don't know that we now

either." I tell him. "Why is that, Alpha?" "Because if it's true both Brent and Ronnie are dead." "Dead! How?" "We don't

exactly know. The report is interesting to say the least, I have sent Chris to verify it." I tell him. "Well, if it is true, then they would be held for execution for what they did to Keska anyway." "Yes but we won't know if someone actually put them

up to it, and if that is true, then we still have a problem." I tell him. "True. I may just go verify things myself as well." He

tells me. "That's fine but try not to disturb to much I want the Doctor to see it as well." I tell him. There is a knock on my

door. "Yes. Come" I call out. "Alpha." The door opens and a lab tech is standing there. "Come in." I say. "Here is the

report that Marcus ordered for you to see. We just finished it, and we ran it three times to verify it sir." "Thank you. What

is your name?" I ask her. "Nancy, Alpha." She answers. "Thank you, Nancy." I say. And take the report from her. She leaves

and closes the door behind her. I open the folder she just handed me. "Well what little DNA was left in the teeth they

found confirms the pile of ash is Ronnie." I tell Mitchell as I hand him the folder. "Dam!" is all he says as he hands it back

to me. "Drake come for breakfast." Carla links me. "Come let's go for breakfast, or Carla will skin me." I tell him. He

chuckles as we both leave my office

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 54**

[ 1,232 words ]

KESKA: Father came in to join us for breakfast. "Morning everyone, hope everyone slept well." He states. We reply to the

affirmative. Then after breakfast he heads out, "I have things I have to check on this morning, and I believe that the first

shipment to Camron goes today, and I want to make sure that goes smoothly." He states. Mackie and I head to mom's

office after I finish with my breakfast and put my dishes in the washer. "I wonder what he has to check on?" Mackie

asked. "Corla turned Brent into an ice statue last night and she turned Ronnie into a pile of ashes" I whisper to her. "OH wow." She whispers back. We get to mom's office and knock. "Come" she calls out. We enter and walk over to the table

where she has a bunch of sample invitations laid out on the table. "I am having a hard time deciding which one to pick."

She says. Mackie and I scan the cards, there are about 6 different cards with different fonts and designs on them. "Can

they be mixed?" I asked, "I believe so yes." Mom says. I pull the one that has our pack emblem on it and then I pull one

that is a cream color but has a pearl like incandescent to it. "I like these two together, it looks classy sophisticated but not

over done." I say. Then Mackie picked two different fonts. "This would look nice on the outside of the card, with the pack

emblem, and this one looks classic for the inside." She pulls the two she picked and put them with the two I picked.

"Beautiful, thank you both, I will get these to the printers right away." She links one of the omegas. There is a knock on

her office door. "Come." "You wished to see me Luna?" "Yes Cally, I need you to take these to the printers, I have

everything I want written out in detail, but if they have any questions tell them to call me or link me. Understood?" "Yes

Luna." She takes the folder from mom and heads out. "Now I need to get your uncle here." She states. "I will link him if

you want?" I tell her. "Yes, dear go ahead." She tells me. \*"Uncle Carson, Mom would like you to come to the Luna's office

please." "What for, may I ask?" "The list for the ball." "On my way."\* "He is on his way." I tell mom. "Thank you dear. Now

what I would like each of you to do is start to add the offspring to the list that I already have made, but I only want the

ones that are 18 or older. Ok?" "Got it." Mom hands each of us a list. Mackie and I compare them and realize they are the

same, so we fold each list in half, and I take the top half, and Mackie takes the bottom half, and we get to work on it, we

each grab a clean sheet of paper and get comfortable at the table mom has in her office when a knock comes at her

door. "Come." She calls out. The door opens and in walks Uncle Carson and he has a bag with him. "So, can I see the

list?" he asked. Mom hands him her copy of it. He skims over it and says "I would like to add Ranier Lake Pack, they are a

smaller pack only about 800 members but fierce and honest, and Wolf Lake Pack, again only about 800-1000 members,

but again fierce and honest. Everyone else looks good." He says. "Do you know the Alpha's, Luna's and or offspring 18

or older and contact information for these packs?" mom asked him. "Yes, Carla I do, or I would not have mentioned

them." "Ok Carson, just let the girls know." Uncle Carson handed the list back to mom and came over to the table and

gave me and Mackie the names of the Alpha's, Luna's, offspring, addresses and general phone numbers. Then Mackie

and I got to work on the rest of the list.

\*Golden Sun Pack: Alpha Thomas, Luna Zema

Prinses: Barrett 22, Trent 20, and Trevor 18.

\*Black Crescent Pack: Alpha Jake, Luna Leann

Alpha apparent Vance 20, Elane 19

\*Cold Moon Pack: Alpha Ty, Luna Tara

Alphas apparent Blake 19 twin Blane 19

\*Moon Rise Pack: Alpha Adrian, Luna Kina, Gamma Rex

\*Dark Moon Pack: Alpha Sean, Luna Mia

Alpha apparent Marcus 20, Mia 19, Alisha 18

\*High Crest Pack: Alpha Lucas, Luna Jewel

Alpha apparent Leasha 19, Josh 18

\*Midnight Sky Pack: Alpha Eric, Luna Barbra

Alpha apparent Simon 21, Sharon 20

Lost in the world of this story? Make sure you're on [Novel5s.com](http://Novel5s.com) to catch every twist and turn. The next chapter awaits,

exclusively on our site. Dive in now!

KESKA: Halfway through the list Dr. Grant showed up to check me out. So, I leave the office and take him to my room. "Dr. Grant, I need to tell you something, but I need you to not tell anyone except maybe Nana Lilly, only because she already

knows." "Ok, what is it you wish to tell me." "I shifted." I tell him "YOU WHAT?" "Sssh, I shifted. Nana thinks that I am a

hybrid that I have more of Papa Rickard in me than the rest of us." I tell him. "Well, if you have shifted, I don't think that

there is any reason to do a check but just to be safe, raise your shirt for me." I do what he asked of me, and he palpates

the area of where my stitches and human appendix were. "Any pain?" he asked me "No." "Ok. I still want you to be

cautious, don't go running the obstacle course." "Ok, but can I ride my bike? And maybe go to the archery range?" I

asked him "You can ease into them, not both right away." He tells me. "Um Doctor?" "Yes." "I was antsy most of

yesterday, do you think that it was because I was going to shift, or was it because of something else, like being hyped on

the pain meds.?" "Were you still taking the pain meds?" "No, only if I was in serious pain which I wasn't." "Then it was

most likely do to the fact that you got your wolf early, to early, I am going to have to do some research on that." He tells me. "I think father wants to talk to you to." I tell him. "Ok, lets head back to the office then." We both get up and leave my room, and head back to mom's office. I knock and open the door and go take my seat next to Mackie and start in on

the list again.

\*Dark Forest Pack: Alpha John, Luna Juniper

Alpha apparent Apollo 20, Krystal 20

\*Dutch Wood Pack: Alpha Shane Luna Avery

Alpha apparent Colton 19, Janica 18

\*Black Waters Pack: Alpha Craig, Luna Marie

Alpha apparent Lex 22, Simone 21 Courtney 20

\*Ranier Lake Pack: Alpha Randolph, Luna Maxine

Alpha apparent Richard 20, Roxie 18

\*Wolf Lake Pack: Alpha Grant, Luna Loraine

Alpha apparent Link 21, Jasmine 19, Gem 18

\*Harvest Moon Pack: Alpha Camron 23

\*Burning Ember Pack: Alpha Fredrick, Luna Susan

Alpha apparent Rachel 21, Rick 20, Renae18

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 55**

[ 1,255 words ]

DRAKE: I get a link from Carla, \*‘‘Dear the Dr. is here to check on Kes, they just went to her room, so come to my office so

you can talk to him when they come back.’’ ‘‘On my way.’’\* I send back to her. ‘‘I have to go back to the pack house, but I

will probably be back with the Dr.’’ I tell my men. I undress and fold my clothes into a neat pile, and I shift, Mitchell puts

my clothes into a backpack for me. My wolf picks it up and I take off running back to the pack house. I shift back, and

redress and head upstairs to Carla’s office. The Dr. and Keska come back into the office, Kes nods at me ‘‘Father.’’ And

returns to what she was doing before the Dr. came. I just nod back to her. "Dr. Grant I need to speak to you please." I say

to him. "Of course, Alpha." I lead the way out of Carla's office and down the hall to mine. "Did you by chance take

pictures and measurements of the bruised handprint, on Keska's neck." I asked him. "Yes, alpha I did." He tells me. "Good

because we need those measurements and pictures, and I will need you to follow me, I have a dilemma on my hands, and

I am hoping you can help solve it." I tell him "I will need to get them from my office." He says. "That's fine, do you have a

backpack, because you will need one, we have to shift to get to where we need to go." I say to him. "Yes, I have one." "I will wait for you out back by the pool when you are ready meet me there and then we will shift and head out." I tell him.

He leaves my office, and I head down to the pool, and wait.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

JANICA: It's Tuesday, lunch just got over, and I take advantage of the slight chaos of the Blue Crescent People getting

ready to leave, I open a link to my brother. \*"Colton, we need to inform Josh and Leasha about Jessie." "I don't know

about Leasha; I have a feeling that she would be on Jessie's side unless there is irrefutable proof against her. But Josh is a

definite." "Do you want to call him, or do you want me to." "I will, but I do need to know everything that you know about

what's going on before I make that call." "We will talk after they leave."\* I close the link.

WYATT: I take advantage of the hustle and bustle of us packing to link James. \*"Star sent me the screen shot of her text messages with Janica, what's there isn't hard proof against Jessie but because we have more knowledge of what went

down, it's not good either." "Let me see it."\* I pull the screen shot up on my phone and hand it over to him to read. {four

idiots, stick to the script, any ideas, hear them, might have to do, Dutch Wood, after lunch, High Crest, home Saturday.}

\*“She said she was going to delete it after she sent to me so that there was no possibility of Jessie accidentally seeing it

on her phone since they have to share a room all the time we are traveling.” “Smart.”\* I close the link as James just nods

at me.

JAMES: I send a text to Dad. {I hope that you were informed of the issue that involves Jessie?} {From what I discerned

from the conversation there were four people involved with Kes’s stabbing.} {I am aware.} is what I get back. When we are

packed, we head downstairs and waited with beta Gregg for the girls. I linked Jessie \*  
\*“What is taking you so long?” “We

are on our way.”\* I close the link. “Jessie says they are on their way.” I tell Gregg. He just nods. I feel a push of a link, so I

open it. \*  
\*“Do you think we should let the Beta in on what we suspect about Jessie? Just in case something does come of

it he won’t be blindsided?”\* Wyatt sent. \*  
\*“Yes but be discreet and quick about it.”\* I send him. I see him pull out his

phone and open it then approach the Beta. I am watching for the girls.

WYATT: “Beta Gregg, I need to show you this.” I hand him my phone and have it opened to the screen shot that Star sent me. After scanning it for a minute he hands it back to me. “When, did you get this, and where.” “Janica told Star about it,

I guess she has a friend that is learning to read lips, and this came from a phone call Jessie got on Monday.” “Heads up.” We hear from James. “We will talk about this later.” The Beta says. I just nod and put my phone away as the girls

approach the vehicle.

BETA GREGG: As the kids load into the vehicle, I shake hands with Alpha Shane and Luna Avery. “Thank you for hosting

us. It was a lovely Graduation ceremony.” I say. “But now we need to hit the road so we can make out next destination on

time.” I say. “It was our pleasure and thank you for coming. I hope that everything is ok with Keska, and they find who did

it.” Alpha Shane says to me. I just nod to him. Give a slight bow in the Luna’s direction, turn and get in the SUV, and we

head out.

COLTON: I stand with my parents and sister waiting for them to leave, the minute the SUV is out of sight. “Dad there is

something you need to see and know.” I say. “What is it?” “We think Jessie had something to do with Keska’s stabbing.”

“Why would you say that?” I turn to my sister and nod to her. “Show him.” I watch as my sister gets out her phone opens

it to her chat screen, scrolls through it to what she wants to show him. “I know that it might be construed as an invasion

of privacy, but in this case, I believe it was worth the risk, so I took the opportunity when it presented itself.” My sister

tells my dad. “Macey got close enough to read what Jessie was saying, she didn’t get everything, but this is what she did

get.” {four idiots, stick to the script, any ideas, hear them, might have to do, Dutch Wood, after lunch, High Crest, home

Saturday.} My dad scans Janica’s screen. “This does not sound or look good, do either of you know if Alpha Drake has

been informed?” Dad asked. “I am unsure, but Janica did tell Star, so I’m sure she got it back to him somehow.” I say. He

nods at us. “We will leave it for them to deal with their own internal mess, but we should inform High Crest to keep an

eye on her.” He says. “I can do it; I will call Josh and bring him up to speed on everything.” I tell dad. “Just the facts, no

gossiping.” He tells me. I nod.

COLTON: I call Josh. The phone rings a few times, before he picks up. “Hey Colton, what’s up?” “You know about Keska

getting stabbed?" I asked him "Yes, Alpha Drake call dad to let him know that the beta was coming with James and

Jessie, why

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 56**

[ 1,341 words ]

Janica and I believe that Jessie may have been involved in it in some way, we don't have any direct proof of it, but I will

have Janica send you a screen shot of a conversation Jessie had with someone on Monday." I tell him. "We just wanted to

give you a heads up, and they just left here maybe 15 minutes ago." "How did you get what you got; proof wise I mean." He asked me. "Janica's friend Macey can read lips, and that is what she picked up from Jessie's conversation." "I know it's

blurring the line on privacy but in this case it's better to know, considering the end result was that her sister was stabbed,

and they didn't seem to be bothered by it." I said to him. "That's crappy on their part." He says. "Yes, but I will make sure

that Janica sends that over to you." "Have her send it to Dad, and I will fill him in when we hang up." "Ok. Bye." "Bye." We hang up. "Janica send that screen shot to Alpha Lucas." "Ok." I close the link.

JOSH: I go to Dad's office and knock. "Come." He calls out. I enter his office and close the door behind me. "I need to

talk with you, about Jessie, from Blue Crescent." I say to him. And just then his phone dinged. "That will probably be from

Janica." I say. "Why would Janica be sending me something?" "Please just look at it, I have no idea what it says, but I will

tell you about it after you check it.” I tell him. {four idiots, stick to the script, any ideas, hear them, might have to do, Dutch Wood, after lunch, High Crest, home Saturday.} Dad reads the message and then shows it to me. “So, what is your

thoughts on this?” he asked me. After reading it a few times, “I think that she maybe orchestrated, or at least had some

part in her sister’s stabbing, along with 4 others, and I feel like she might try something again, with the part of [any ideas,

hear them, might have to do.] and the last part is their itinerary.” I say to him. “But again, this is speculation on our part,

but if true, Keska could be in danger.” I tell him. “I agree with you, we will keep an eye on her, while she is here, but we

cannot interfere with their internal pack issues.” He tells me. “I also don’t believe that we tell Leasha, she and Jessie are

tight.” I tell dad. “Agreed.” I leave his office.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

KESKA: After we finish the list for the ball, “How about we get a driving lesson.” I state. “Yeah, we could do that, it’s not

strenuous on you, it might be on Stephen though.” Mackie chuckles. I just give her a glare. “As long as you are back for

lunch.” Mom says. “Ok.” I link Stephen. “Stephen, are you able to give us our first driving lesson now?” “I will check with

miss Lilly.” “Ok.” I close the link and wait. “He is checking with Nana.” I tell Mackie. I feel the push of a link, and I open for

it. “I will be there to take you for your first lesson in a couple of minutes.” “Thank you, Stephen.” I close the link. “Let’s go

he will meet us out front.” I tell Mackie.

DRAKE: The Dr. shows up and he has changed from his business attire into workout clothes. I look at him and nod. We

both strip down pack our clothes in the backpacks, shift into our wolves and head out to where the sight of the incident

happened. We reach the spot where the ice statue is on the west border, and we shift back. We get dressed. "Wow, What

the heck?" the Dr. asked shocked. "Yes, I agree, now you understand why I asked you to come." I said. "I would not have

believed this without seeing it for myself." He said. I just nod. Before he can step up to the statue I stop him. "Wait, I need

to hear from Darius." I tell him. He steps back. I link Darius. "Darius, are you close?" "Yes Alpha." I need to know what you

found." I will be there in a couple of minutes." He sends, and I close the link. When he gets here, he starts to inspect the

ground, and he starts to sniff, and he circles outward, like he is searching for something, then circles back in. "I know it was a wolf Alpha, and a pack member, but I have never smelled it before, but it is from this pack." He tells us. "But where

did it go?" I ask him. "I don't know, the tracks just stop." I tell him to go to the pile of ashes and check there as well. "Yes

Alpha." And he leaves us. I turn to the Dr. "It's ok now you can check it out." I tell him. "This is incredible, I have never

seen anything like this in my life." He says. I know what he means. "What I need to know Doc., is does his hand fit the

bruise on Keska's neck?" I ask. I watch as he takes out his instruments and starts to measure the hands of the statue. "Yes

alpha, his hand is a match in measurement to Keska's bruise. But that does not mean he did it." He tells me. "How?" I

question him. "Think of it like this, I buy a pair of gloves, you buy a pair of gloves, and Frank buys a pair of gloves, Frank

and I can wear the same pair of gloves, but yours are too big to fit us, so Frank and I would still be suspect, but you would not." He explains. I nod in understanding. "I was just hoping that we had a lead, but now we just have more

questions." I say. "I still may have some help for you. Keska shifted this morning. It could have been her wolf. It makes

sense with what Darius said." He tells me. "But this?" I wave my hand at the statue. "That I don't know about." He says.

“Come let me show you what else.” I take him the five feet up the boarder to the pile of ashes. “This is what is left of

Ronnie Briginhall.” Again, I turn my attention to Darius. “What do you have for me?” I asked him. “Same as with the

statue, it’s a wolf and a pack member. But here’s the weird thing, where the tracks start.” And he takes us back a few

steps and points to the ground, and it looked like he was stalked for like 3-4 steps. And then ashes. “But this is where the

tracks start, nothing before. And they go for about another 3-4 steps and nothing.” He says. “It’s the same in both

places.”

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

KESKA: Mackie and I each spend about 45 minutes behind the wheel of our car, before Stephen takes us back to the pack

house for lunch. “Stephen, do you think we will be ready to drive by the of the week?” I ask him. “It is possible, but you

have to be diligent and follow everything I am instructing you on.” He tells us. “We will.” We get out of the car and head

into the pack house for lunch. “Hi Sarah, what’s for lunch today?” “Your favorite, a salad with ranch and Italian dressing

and a sandwich with ham, turkey, beef, and lettuce.” She tells us. “Anything I can help with?” “Not today love, it’s your

birthday.” “Since when has that made a difference?” I asked her. “Since your uncle is here.” She said. So, Mackie and I went to the pack dining room to have lunch with the rest of the pack. Nana, Uncle Carson and beta Calen came in and

sat down with us. “Happy birthday Keska” Uncle Carson said

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## I watched as we were driving away to go park 57

[ 1,500 words ]

And he kissed the top of my head. "Thank you, Uncle." I said. "Happy birthday." Beta Calen said. "Thank you, Beta." I

replied. I hear the front door open and there was Adrian and Kina. I go hug them both, "thank you both so much for

coming." "We wouldn't miss your birthday sweets." Adrian says. "Uncle Carson. I would like you to meet my mate Kina,

Kina this is our great Uncle Carson." "Nice to meet you." Kina stretches out her hand to shake his. "You as well." He

shakes her hand. "So, what are we having for lunch today?" Uncle asked "Salad and sandwiches, because I think that

dinner might be bigger. Unsure but possibly." I tell him with a shrug of my shoulders. "What will dinner be?" He asked.

"Well, I hope it will be filet mignon, with all the fixings, but we will have to wait and see." I said.

DRAKE: I get a link from the front gate. \*"Alpha, Alpha Adrian and Luna Kina are here." "Let them in." "Yes Alpha." "Drake

come for lunch, your uncle is here and is sitting with Keska."\* I get the link from Carla.\*"Adrian and Kina are here as well."\* I send back to her. "Alright guys time to head back for lunch." I call out to everyone. I undress fold my clothes and

put them in the backpack, as did the Dr. we all shifted into our wolves and headed back to the pack house. I shifted back

and redressed and headed inside to go cleanup for lunch with the rest of the family. I came back downstairs and headed

to the family dining room. No one was there. \*"Where is everyone?"\* I linked Carla. \*"In the pack dining room."\* I get

back. So, I head over there. "Why is everyone in here?" I whispered to Carla "Because this is where Keska decided to have

lunch." She whispers back. I take my seat at the table and an omega brings me a plate with a salad, three sandwiches, a

cup of tomato soup, and some chips. "Is this what you asked for, for your birthday lunch?" I asked Keska. "Yep." She says

popping the P. "Kes, I would like to have you come by my office after lunch." Dr. Gant says to her. I see she stiffens at his words and looks in the direction of Lilly. Who just nods. "Ok, I guess." She says to him.

CARLA: "Is everything alright Dr.?" "Yes, I just want to take an ultrasound to check the internal stitches." He tells me.

"Ok."

CARSON: "I will make sure she gets there; we are going to celebrate her birthday after lunch with gift openings." I say.

"So, is everyone done?" I asked. And looked around at every one there. I see a lot of nods. "So, lets head out to the

pool." I say.

KESKA: As we head out to the pool, Adrian signs to me that Kina is expecting their first pup. I just hug them both. And

sign (congratulations, but why the signing?) (didn't they want to announce it to everyone?) he signs back (Not yet, we want to wait just a bit longer.) I sign (Love you.) to him. "Father, would it be possible to get an early driver's license?" I

asked him. "I'm not sure, why do you ask?" He says to me. "Well, if all goes well at the Dr.'s Stephen has agreed to give Mackie and me lessons, and I was hoping that by the end of the week we might be able to take the test and get our

license early." I say. "And that is not a strenuous activity." I add. "I will look into it." He tells me. "Thank you." We all head

out back to the pool. I was shocked and pleasantly surprised at what I received, the arrows were superb that Beta Calen

gave me, and 2 of the newest version of Samsung's phone. From Uncle Carson, why Samsung? because it's not what

Jessie has, and easier for me to use. And a brand-new bow form Nana. I was ecstatic to say the least. , Adrian and Kina

gave me a book on sign language and gift cards to a sporting goods store. "Nana, You got us the car, you didn't have to

get me something else." I said to her. "I wanted to." She tells me. We had my cookies for dessert. . I walked Adrain and

Kina out when they left to go home. "Thank you again for coming, love you both, and I have another secret that I will

share with you later." I give them both hugs. Then I headed to the Dr. office. \*"Nana will you come with me to the Doctor's?"\* I link her. \*"Yes dear I will come with you."\* She sends back. So, we head out to uncle Carsons car and head

to the Dr's. office.

KESKA: Uncle Carson drives Nana and I to the Dr. office. We get taken right back to a room where he has the ultrasound

machine already set up. A nurse come in and hands me a paper gown to put on. I step into the small bathroom and

change into the gown, when I come out the Dr. is there talking with Nana. "I believe that she is a phase wolf." I heard

Nana say. "But what exactly is a Phase wolf?" "I can't say for sure exactly, but my mate was a phase elemental he could

become the element, move as the element. I believe that Keska's wolf can also move as the element, so if she is an earth

element she can leave no tracks, in her wolf form, she would be able to glide on a breeze of wind if she had the air

element, walk through a fire and not be burnt if she has the fire element, and basically walk on water and you wouldn't

see her if she has the water element." Nana tells the Dr. I come over to the table and wait for them to be done with their

conversation. "Umm Nana, I don't know about all of that, but I know that I had this weird feeling, it is hard to describe,

but like how when we shift, and we shake out our fur? It felt like that, but only in slow motion, but it was all the way down

to my skin, not just my fur, and then I was behind Brent, and after Corla bit him, it happened again, and I was behind

Ronnie. After she bit him, we jumped like how we do on the obstacle course and then headed for home." I told them.

DR GRANT: "Keska, did Corla kill Brent and Ronnie?" He asked "Yes, she said it was because they hurt us." she told me.

"Kes, you need to tell your father about it." I said. "I will." She said. "But right now can we get this ultrasound thing done

please." "Yes of course." she gets on the table, and I put a paper sheet over her then asked her to raise the gown, I pull

the sheet down to just below her lower stomach. "This will be a bit cold." I tell her as I squirt the gel on the right side of

her stomach. Then I put the wand down and start to move it around and then I add a little bit more pressure to it. I turn

the screen towards her so she can see what I see. "Well, this is where your stitches should be. And as you can see they are

gone, and you are completely healed." I tell her "Can I shoot?" She asked, "I don't see why not, but you do need to tell

your parents that you have your wolf, or you could get push back from them." I tell her. "Yes Doctor." She says. "Do you

think you could show me your wolf?" I asked. "Sure, I suppose." She handed her clothes to Lilly, and she leaves the paper

gown on, I get it, why waste the effort of getting dressed when she will just have to get undressed again. Once we are

outside she shifts into her wolf. After she shifts she shakes out her fur like most wolves do. Before me stands a large red wolf, she has the brightest green eyes I have ever seen, a birth mark in the shape of a burning ember and a shimmering

outline to her, like the ripples on the surface of water. {So now you see me, what do you want to know?} She asked me.

"You speak, how is that possible?" {just like you.} she tells me "Our wolves speak through our human's, or they mind link,

how is it possible that you are speaking.” {I can access her vocal cords and use them as well.} “What else can you do?” {I

can phase.} “What is that?” {I don’t know, watch.} and she shakes, more like

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 58**

[ 1,413 words ]

shimmy’s and she is a few feet away from where we are standing. Then she does it again and I lost sight of her {Boo} she

says. And I jump, and she starts to laugh. “Do you know that you disappear?” I asked, {No, just phase.} she replies. “Do

you know how far you can go?” I asked {No, haven’t tried.} she says. “Do you have all the elements?” I asked {No, only

fire, and Water.} she answers me. Listening to her speak is like listening to Scooby Doo. {Are we done? Keska wants to go

shoot and she wants another driving lesson.} “Yes we are done, it was nice to meet you Corla.” I tell her. {Thank you, but I

am going to nip you.} she says to me. “Why?” {To make you immune.} she tells me. And before anyone can do or say

anything else she nips me on the leg. I watch as she shifts back, and there is no sound of bones breaking, just Keska

laying on the ground naked. Lilly hands her, her clothes and she gets dressed. “Can you describe how you feel when you

shift back?” I asked her. “I feel a push, that is the best way I can put it, just a push, like I am being pushed forward.” She

says. I nod my head.

LILLY: "Sorry Doctor, I will let you take a vial of my blood so you can have an antidote to her poison. I will give you what

you will need to help you not be quite so sick as well, and then you will be immune and will be able to use your own

blood to make an antidote." I tell him. "when will I feel the effects of her bite?" he asked. "Oh no, that was not a bite, that

was a nip, there is a big difference. If she actually bit you, you would be dead, with the nip you will start to feel sick

probably by dinner time tonight." I tell him. "Well then let's get that vial of blood from you, and you can tell me what I

will need to do, and what I will need to get to help with the recovery process." He says to me. We all head back inside

and he calls in a nurse. "Please take three vials of Miss Lilly's blood." He tells the nurse. "Three? I agreed to one." I tell

him in a not so nice tone. "Yes, but three ensures that we will have a bit of a head start if the need arises, and they don't

have an indefinite expiration date." He tells me. After the nurse takes my blood I write down the herbs that the Doctor will need to help expedite his recovery. And Keska and I leave the clinic and head back to the pack house.

KESKA: I link both mom and father when we get back. \*"Father, mom I have something I need to talk to you about."

"Come to my office dear, Drake we can talk here, I have the invitations back and we can start addressing them as we

talk." "Yes mom." "I will be there in a minute dear."\* I close the link. "Mom has the invitations back from the printers and

she wants me to help address them." I tell Nana. "Alright dear, you go, and I will see you at dinner." She says and I hug

her bye. And turn and head up the stairs, to mom's office. I link Mackie as I head up.

\*"Mom has the invitations back and wants me to help address them, want to come help?" "Sure, I don't have anything to do right now anyways so I might as well, and the sooner we get that done the sooner we can have another driving lesson." "True that, and maybe get some

practice in on the range before dinner. But before warned I am going to tell mom and father that I have Corla.” “That

should be interesting. I am on my way.”\* I close the link. And knock on mom’s office door. “Come.” I walk in and take a

seat at the table and start to divide the invitations. Then another knock comes. “come.” Mom call. And father walks

through the door.

CARLA: “What was it that you wanted to talk to us about dear?” “First, Mackie is on her way to help, so please let her in,

then I will tell you.” She says. (I swear those two are thicker than flies on a dung pile.) “Alright.” There comes another

knock. “Come” I call, and Mackinze enters my office and walks over to take her place at the table to start on her pile of

invitations. “Alright Keska, please tell us what you wanted to talk about.” “I have my wolf.” She deadpans like it’s no big

deal, and with very little emotion attached to it. “WHAT? HOW IS THAT EVEN POSSIBLE!” I practically shout. “Carla dear,

calm down.” Drake comes over to me and takes me in his arms, he rubs small circles on my back to help calm me, I take

in his scent, which helps a great deal. “The Dr. and Nana believe it’s because of all the trauma I went through.” She says.

“Did your wolf kill Brent and Ronnie?” Drake asked her. “Yes, she said it was because they hurt us, and yes she said us.

Nana believes it’s because of the fact that I am a hybrid.” She says.

DRAKE: “Ok, you need to start at the beginning of this story.” I tell her. “I got Corla this morning at midnight, we went for

a run, then the next thing I know we were stalking Brent, she jumped bit him in the butt, he turned to ice, then I phased

as she puts it and we were behind Ronnie, again she jumps and bites him in the leg, poof a pile of ashes, I asked her why,

and she said because they hurt us, I asked how she knew, and she said she smelled them and she remembered. And

that's it that's all she said then we jumped, like when I am running the obstacle course at Nana's, and we landed about a

foot and a half past Ronnie and headed back to the pack house."

CARLA: "Is it the trauma of being stabbed?" I asked her. "Among other things." She says. "What other things?" "Oh, I

don't know, maybe being rejected by my grandmother, and sister, getting clawed twice, and then being stabbed take

your pick." She says shrugging her shoulders. Yet again, she deadpans her answer, with no emotion attached, not even a

hint of sarcasm to her voice. "Well, I guess I can close the case on what happened to Brent and Ronnie." Drake states.

"You said you're a hybrid? How is that possible?" I asked, "Because Papa was a phase elemental, so my wolf is a phase wolf." She states. "May we see her?" Drake asked. "Maybe after we finish with the invitations, I had to shift for the Doctor,

so I am a bit-tired right now." She says. "But with all of that being said, may I go to the range later?" She asked. Now that

she has her wolf, there is no reason not to be able to do what she wants. "I don't mind." I told her. She looks to Drake.

"Am I to be punished?" She asked him.

DRAKE: "Why would you be punished?" "Because of Corla killing two pack members." She states like it's an everyday

occurrence, the punishment not the killing. "No, you will not be punished." I tell her. "Your wolf knew who hurt you, and

because of what they did, they would have been executed anyway." I tell her. She just looks at me and blinks her eyes, like

she is lost for a moment. "What is it?" I asked, "I guess I don't understand why you would have executed them?" She

says. "Because they hurt you!" I reply with a bit of harshness in my tone. She shrugs her shoulders and starts working on

the invitations.

KESKA: By the time Mackie and I finish addressing and stuffing the envelopes for the invitations it's dinner time. \*So

much for our driving lesson, but maybe we can still get a round in on the range after dinner.\* I linked Mackie. \*You are

just itching to use your new bow hu?\*

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 59**

[ 1,253 words ]

\*Kinda yeah, but you get my old bow, and if you're ok with it maybe Liam can have your old bow." "Naw I don't mind;

he can have it if he wants it." "Let's head down.\* We leave mom's office and head downstairs for dinner. "We are done

with the invitations Mom." I tell her. We end up in the family dining room for dinner this time, with Uncle Carson, Beta

Calen, Nana, Mom Father, the twins Mackie, and me. Dinner was my favorite, filet mignon, air fried green beans till they

are crunchy and tater tots. After dinner Mackie and I help with clean up. "Liam, you want to go to the range with Mackie

and me?" I asked him. "Sure." He says. "I need to run home quick and grab my bow." Mackie says. "Ok we will meet you

on the Cope's road." I tell her. Then I go grab both my new bow and my old bow and the arrows that I just got at lunch

time. We head out back and jump on our bikes and head for the dirt road that cuts through the trees and wait for

Mackie. We all head to the archery range.

MACKIE: "Hey Liam, would you like to have my bow?" "Are you sure?" "Yeah, I am going to take Keska's old one, so if

you want you can have mine." "Yeah! Then I don't have to rent one either." "No, you don't."

KESKA: We get to the range; I go into the shop. "Kent check out my arrows." I show him my new arrows. "Wow, where did

you get them? The fletching is amazing." He says, "The old Beta got them for me, and Nana bought me a new bow." I

hand him my bow to check out as well. "Nice craftsmanship." He tells me. "We would like to use the last three targets, and we will need some more arrows, I plan on breaking these in, but there are three of us, so we need more." I tell him. "On

it." He hands me two more quivers full of arrows. "Any bows this time around?" he asked. "No, we got that covered, Liam

is getting Mackie's bow, and she is taking my old bow." I tell him. I take the quivers and head out to the targets. We are

able to shoot for about an hour to an hour and a half before it gets too dark to shoot safely, we collect the arrows we

used, and I take them back into Kent and pay for the rental. We head back to the pack house, say bye to Mackie and

head into bed.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

DRAKE: "Will I ever be able to win her back?" I ask Carla. "What do you mean?" she asked. "You saw her, the look on her

face when I said that Brent and Ronnie would have been executed for what they did, like why would I do that." I said to

her. "There is more, and it has to do with Jessie." "Now what? Has she caused problems?" "No, not yet anyway." I pull out

my phone and open it to what Eleven sent me that she got from Star. [four idiots, stick to the script, any ideas, hear them,

might have to do, Dutch Wood, after lunch, High Crest, home Saturday.] “But from the looks of this she might when she

gets home.” I tell her. I hand her my phone and let her read what was there. “What is all this.” She asked me. “Long story,

short version, Janica has a friend that reads lips, and this is what she picked up from a conversation that Jessie had on the

phone on Monday.” I tell her. “Well, I guess we know 2 of the 4.” She says, “Yes I guess we do.” I say.

CARLA: “I have a feeling that you are right, she might be planning some kind of mischief for when she comes home.” I

tell Drake. “We need to get ahead of it, and find out who the other two are, so that maybe we can prevent more deaths,

and maybe save Jessie some trouble.” I say. “Maybe Jessie needs a little trouble, give her a taste of what she has caused

Keska.” Drake says. “After everything I have let her get away with if she gets her hand caught in the proverbial cookie jar

as it were, she will have to take her punishment.” He says.

DRAKE: I open a link to Mitchell,\*“Please come to my office and bring the file on Keska’s stabbing with you, I need to see who was in her group of sparing partners.” “Yes Alpha, I take it you have some answers?” “Yes, and an idea about some

others as well.”\* I close the link. “Come to the office with me dear, I just linked Mitchell, he will be here soon.” “Alright.”

As Carla and I head to my office I get a link from Frank. \*“Alpha, I have a new cadet to the Delta force with me, he says he

needs to speak with you.” “What’s his name?” “Chris Banks Alpha.” “Send him up with Mitchell.” “Yes Alpha.”\* I close the

link. “What’s going on Drake?” Carla asked me. “Not sure, I just hope it’s not more problems. Mitch is bringing a new

cadet to Delta force with him that wants to talk with me.” I tell her.

MITCHELL: “Hold up Mitch.” I hear Frank call out. I stop and turn my head to look in the direction of his voice. “What’s

up? I need to get to the Alpha's office." I tell him. "I know, but take Chris here with you, he needs to talk to the Alpha,

and Alpha said to send him with you." He tells me. "Come on." I say. "Thank you." Chris says to both of us. We head to

the pack house and then up to the Alpha's office.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

JESSIE: It was after lunch on Wednesday and my phone rings. I check the caller ID and see that Dedi is calling me. I look

around to make sure I am alone and answer the call. "Hey Dedi, what's up?" "Brent and Ronnie are dead!" she whisper

screams at me. "What? How?" "We don't know, the alpha is looking into it, but rumor has it that they think the two of

them had something to do with Keska's stabbing." She says. "What about the other two?" I ask. "Haven't heard anything

from or about them." She says. "Let's hope it stays that way." "Any ideas yet for the ball?" She asks. "I'm thinking the

kidnapping is the only way to go, there is an old hunting cabin about a ¼ mile from the north boarder that doesn't get

used any more, all we need to do is chloroform her, and take her there, have one of the guys watch to make sure she

stays put until the ball is over and I am long gone with my mate." I say to her. "You're pretty confident about finding your mate." She says to me. "I have to be, I don't want to spend any more time around that snotty bitch then I must. Go make

sure that the cabin is ready for her and nail the windows shut from the outside." I tell her. And I hang up and go about

my business.

UNKNOWN: I was on my way to clean the dining hall when I heard a phone ring

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## I watched as we were driving away to go park 60

[ 1,430 words ]

to somewhere more private than the middle of the hallway where anyone could listen in. I need to get away from here

quickly and tell the Alpha what I heard. I head back the way I came from and go straight to the Luna's office. I knock on

her door. "Come." She calls out. "I am sorry to disturb you Luna Jewel, but I just overheard a very bad conversation

between someone named Dedi, and I don't know who, as I did not see them, about a kidnapping." I tell her. "Calm down

Cammi, breath." She tells me.

LUNA JEWEL: "Lucas, I need you in my office NOW!" I link my mate. "Is something wrong?" "Cammi just came into my

office almost in tears and on the verge of hyperventilating." "On my way."\* I close the link. I pour a glass of water for her,

and hand it to her. "Slow sips." I tell her. She nods at me as she takes the glass from my hand with both of hers. A minute

later there is a knock on my door and Lucas comes in. "Are you better now?" I asked her. She nods her head at me. "Ok,

now slower this time tell us what you heard." I say in a calm voice to her. And she nods again. "I was on my way to help in

the dining hall, like you asked me to, when I heard a phone ringing so I stopped where I was, as I did not want to disturb

the person, and believing that they would go somewhere more private than the middle of the hallway, I did not mean to

eavesdrop truly I did not." She starts to rush. "It's ok Cammi no one is going to punish you, you're ok." I tell her. "Just tell

us what you heard." She nods her head again. "The person Dedi called the lady, the lady asked [what and how], then the

lady asked [what about the other two], then the lady says [let's hope it stays that way], then the lady says [I'm thinking

that the kidnapping is the only way to go, there is a hunting cabin ¼ mile from the north boarder that nobody uses

anymore, just chloroform her and have one of the guys watch to make sure she stays put until the ball is over and I leave with my mate], then the lady says [I have to be, I don't want to spend any more time around that snotty bitch than I have

to], and then the lady says [go make sure the cabin is ready and nail the windows shut from the outside.] And then I left, I

needed to be away from there and tell someone, so I came here." "You did the right thing Cammi." I nod at her.

Remember slow sips, I point to her water. "Yes Luna."

LUCAS: I pull my mate over to her desk and take out my phone and let her read it. "I guess we now have all the pieces to

this." I point at my phone. "Where did you get this, and when?" she asked me. Janica sent to me per Josh's request,

yesterday." I told her, "They all feel that Jessie had something to do with Keska's stabbing, and I would say that with what

Cammi just heard and with this, (pointing at my phone) I think that I need to call Alpha Drake and let him know to expect

trouble when his kids get home." I tell her. "You should tell him to put her in the cells for what she caused!" She tells me.

"You'll get no argument from me." I tell her, but we can't tell another Alpha how to handle his pack or his kids." I tell her.

I will call him after dinner." I tell her. "And Josh needs to know, but we are keeping it from Leasha for now until there is

solid proof about Jessie, as they are so close, we don't want to let on about anything." I tell her. "Yes, but with what we

just learned, (she nods her head towards Cammi.) I would say that is solid proof." She tells me. "Do you mind if I link Josh

and have him come here and hear what Cammi heard For himself?" I ask her. "No go ahead." "Josh I am in your mother's

office with her and Cammi, you need to come and hear this for yourself." "On my way." I close the link. I take out my

phone and set it to record, I don't want to put Cammi through having to tell the story over and over as it clearly has

upset her, so I will record it to save her the anxiety. A knock comes on the office door and Cammi jumps. "Cammi you're

ok." Jewel spoke softly to her. And then called "Come." The door opened and Josh comes in. "You wanted to see me?"

"Yes Josh we did, Cammi here just overheard a conversation that you will need to share with James." I tell him. "Then I

think he should be here to hear it himself, and possibly the Beta as well." He says. I look at my mate "He has a point

about that." I say to her. She nods. "Cammi, we are going to have you tell the young Alpha, and the Beta of Blue Crescent what you heard, you are safe, and no one will hurt you, do you think you can do that for us?" Jewel asked her in a

calming voice. She nods to my mate. So, I call the Beta and Josh calls James.

LUCAS: We only have to wait a couple of minutes to wait before a knock come at the door. "Come." My mate calls out.

The door opens and both James and the Beta come in. "Alpha, Luna, I hope all is well." Beta Gregg greets us. "Yes all is well, the reason we called you in here, you are aware of the issue surrounding Jessie?" "I was made aware before we left Dutch Wood, has she caused trouble?" "Not for us, she hasn't but I fear she has some not so nice plans for when she

gets home, but please take a seat." "Cammi, this Beta Gregg Gleeson, and the young Alpha James from Blue Crescent

pack. The conversation that you overheard, we think has something to do with their pack, ok. So, I want you to tell them

exactly what you told us, can you do that?" I asked her. She nods her head, seeming a bit calmer now. I start my phone,

so we get it recorded. ("I was on my way to help in the dining hall, like you asked me to, when I heard a phone ringing so

I stopped where I was, as I did not want to disturb the person, and believing that they would go somewhere more private

than the middle of the hallway, I did not mean to eavesdrop truly I did not.") "We know, Cammi you wouldn't do that if

you had a choice." I tell her. She nods. I nod my head to have her continue. "The person Dedi called the lady, the lady

asked [what and how], then the lady asked [what about the other two], then the lady says [let's hope it stays that way],

then the lady says [I'm thinking that the kidnapping is the only way to go, there is a hunting cabin ¼ mile from the north

boarder that nobody uses anymore, just chloroform her and have one of the guys watch to make sure she stays put until

the ball is over and I leave with my mate], then the lady says [I have to be, I don't want to spend any more time around

that snotty bitch than I have to], and then the lady says [go make sure the cabin is ready and nail the windows shut from

the outside.] And then I left, I needed to be away from there and tell someone, so I came here." She finishes her narrative

and seems to be a bit unsettled again. Jewel comes and rubs small circles on her back to help calm her. I see James look

at the Beta. "Thank you, Cammi? Is it?" James speaks calmly to her, and gives her a small smile. "You're welcome." She

whispers to him. "Come gentlemen let's finish this in my office so my mate can calm her down again without the

pressure of us looming over her." I say.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

# I watched as we were driving away to go park 61

[ 1,534 words ]

LUCAS: We all stand and head to the door. I kiss my mate as I follow the others out. I lead them down the hall and up the

stairs to my office. Once inside James is the first to speak. "Please don't take this the wrong way, as I mean no disrespect

Alpha, but how sure are you in her competency? She seems a bit off." "She has some sensory issues, but she is honest, we saved her from her old pack that did nothing but belittle and abuse her." I tell him. He nods in understanding then. "I was going to call the Alpha after diner to inform him of what we found out today, I also recorded it so she doesn't have

to keep telling the story, it upsets her to think that someone will be in danger." I tell them. "We would like to be in on

that call." Beta Gregg says. "I would like to get an update of what is going on back home, and if they found anything out

about the stabbing." He continues. "Of course, I quite understand." I say. "Dad will need to put someone on Keska as well, and she is going to hate that." James says. "Well, if the rumor is true that I heard about what happened at your

cousin's induction, and Luna ceremony I don't know that I would worry too much about your sister." I say. "What's the

rumor?" The Beta asked. "That she gave Alpha Camron a black eye and some bruised ribs." I say. "That's news to me."

James says, "and I was there, but I can find out easily enough though." I just chuckle "Did you have eyes on your sister

the whole time, or were you enjoying the festivities?" I asked him. He nodded in understanding "But still, if true it's

impressive that she could have done that to an Alpha. How can you confirm a rumor about him?" Josh says. "I have his

number, as we have a contract with him.” James says. “Yes, but still, she did get stabbed.” Beta Gregg says. We all nod to

that. “It would be interesting to know, though.” I say. “Would you like me to call him to confirm?” James asked. “Sure.” I

chuckle.

JAMES: I pull out my phone and scroll to Alpha Camron’s name and hit call. It rings a few times before he answers.

“Hello, James, is everything going ok?” he asked. “Yes as far as I know, I am at High Crest Pack, may I put you on

speaker? Alpha Lucas would like to ask you a question.” “Sure.” I hit the speaker. “You are now on speaker Alpha

Camron.” I tell him. “Hello, may I assume there are others in the room as well?” He asked. “Yes Alpha, I am Alpha Lucas,

my son Josh and Blue Crecent’s Beta Gregg along with James are all here.” Alpha Lucas says. “What may I help you

gentlemen with?” He asked, “I know that this is really a silly reason to be calling, but I heard a rumor that a certain young

lady may have gotten the better of you at a certain induction ceremony?” All we hear is laughter

coming from the other end of the connection. “Yes, it is very true, but in my defense, I was unaware the lady in question

was alpha born, and that she knows aikido. So, if anyone is thinking of trying to sneak up on her be for warned.” He says

with a lighthearted chuckle. “Thank you, I will keep that in mind.” Alpha Lucas says with a chuckle of his own. “But since

you called, I have a question for you, if I may.” “Go ahead.” “I believe that you have a tech manufacturing company?”

“Yes.” “Would you be interested in coming to see me and possibly setting up a trade agreement?” “I would need more

information, but we can discuss that at the mating ball in a couple weeks.” “I will look forward to it. Speaking of said

young lady, how is your sister Keska, James?" He asked me. "We had an incident, and she got hurt, but doc says she will

be fine." I tell him. "Please keep me informed. But I must be going. Bye." "Bye." I hang up.

JAMES: "Alpha Lucas will you please send a copy of that recording to me and to Beta Gregg?" I asked him. "Sure." He

says. I look at Josh "We need to go join the others and try not to let on that Jessie is caught. I believe that dad will want

to deal with her his way." "Roger that." "Alpha, Beta Gregg." I incline my head to show both men respect. And a silent

question of dismissal. Alpha Lucas nods Josh and I leave. "We join the girls and Wyatt out at the pool. "Jessie is caught

dead to rights." I link Wyatt. "What? How?" "The Omega Cammi, she overheard Jessie's phone call with Dedi. Alpha

Lucas is going to send a copy of the recording he took of her telling us what she heard to me and Beta Gregg." "Cammi?

isn't she the one that's a bit off?" "Yes, she probably has some form of P.T.S.D. They saved her from her last pack that

bullied her, but he says she's honest. That's good enough for me." "Dose it shed light on the other information we

have?" "Yes, it fills in some of the gaps, and also gives us some of what she will try when we get home." "Wow." "Did you

know that our sisters know aikido?" "No, where did you hear that?" "Alpha Camron. I will tell you later, right now we need

to get back to the group." "Copy that." I close the link.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

MITCHELL: I knock on the office door. "Come." I hear so I open the door and usher Chris in first and enter after him and

close the door. "Come have a seat." I hear the Alpha tell Chris. "You have the file I asked for?" he asked me. I hand him

the file I had in my hand, and he puts it down in front of him.

DRAKE: "So Chris right? What can I do for you?" "Umm, well Alpha I think that I may have messed up." "How so?" "I think

I was used. I am unsure how to explain this." "Take your time, let's start with what it pertains to." I tell him. "Well Alpha, it

was me that raised the alarm the day that your daughter was stabbed. I did smell rotten meat, I just didn't investigate it well enough, but I thought that I was following the chain of command, they told me to link Kirk Anders, and that he would inform the head guard." He tells me. I open the file that Mitchell brought with him, I see Kirk Anders name as one

to the three others that Keska was partnered with that day. I underline his name and show Mitchell. "Do you know why

they told you to link Kirk? And who exactly told you to link him?" I asked him. "I believe looking back on it Alpha that it

was because I beat them at what I thought was a friendly game of poker. Brent Charter and Rodney Barns" he tells me. I

write the name Rodney Barns down on the file folder. "Thank you, Chris, was Rodney with you on patrol that night" I

asked him. "Yes, as a matter of fact he was part of the squad with me." He tells me. "You have helped a lot, just a word of

advice going forward, link the head warrior yourself, let him know of any suspicions you might have on the given

situation and then play along with them, that way you are protecting yourself from ending up in the cells." I tell him. "Yes

Alpha, thank you." "You are welcome, you may go." I tell him. I watch as he leaves my office. "Well, I think we now know

who the other 2 are." I tell Mitchell. "Sorry Alpha, you lost me." I take out my phone and open it to the screenshot of

Jessie's conversation that she had with someone on Monday. "This was on Monday." I tell him and let him read it. "Ok, wow." He states. "Yes, and now we know who the other two are and who the scapegoat is supposed to be. Have

someone keep an eye on Chris, just for his safety, and to be his back up if and when the time comes." I tell Mitchell. "Yes

Alpha I have just the person in mind, I will need to let him, and Frank know what's going on though." "I understand, but

only those two, we can't take any chances and tip our hand before Jessie tries to make her move." "Yes Alpha." "Thanks

Mitch, I'll let you get back to then." He nods and leaves my office. I just look at Carla, "What do you think?" I asked her. "I

don't know what to think, I never expected that one of our children could be this bad!" she was close to tears.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 62**

[ 1,490 words ]

"Nor I, but in hindsight it is my fault for not asking Keska her side of the issues when I punished her." I say. "But how do we fix this, fix Jessie?" She asked. "We will have to humble her, show her that what she has done is not the actions of an

Alpha or Luna, or any ranked wolf for that matter." I tell her. "She is taking after your mother, Drake." "I know, and it's

time she learns the cold hard truth about my mother." I tell her.

MITCHELL: As I leave the Alpha's office I link Frank. "I need you to get Cash and meet me in my office in 5 minutes, there

are some issues that we need to discuss." "On it." He sends back to me. I get to the barracks and head to my office. Both

frank and Cash are waiting for me. "Gentlemen, there is a lot to go over, so please let me explain things, and then I will

answer questions." I tell them. I go over everything from the text messages between Janica and Star, the fact that Brent

and Ronnie are dead, and the information that Chris shared. “Cash I want you partnered with him for maybe the next

month, we don’t know what Jessie has up her sleeve, and the Alpha wants eyes on him, for backup and safety reasons.” I

tell him. “Do we know who killed Brent and Ronnie?” “I think the Alpha does, but he didn’t share that with me, plus I

believe he feels that the case on them is closed.” I tell them. “But now there is another person of interest Rodney Barns,

the Alpha feels that he and Kirk are the other 2 that was mentioned in the text messages sent from Janica and Star.” “So,

if I am following all of this, Jessie had Brent, Ronnie, Kirk, and Rodney involved in Keska’s stabbing?” Frank asked, “That is

what the Alpha and I both believe, and then they were going to pin everything on Chris, he was the one that raised the

alarm the day she was stabbed, but instead of linking me, or you Frank he was told to link Kirk.” I told them. “Something

isn’t adding up Mitch.” Frank says. “How so.” “I was on the field that day training them, and the alarm came from mid

field, not from the right side, where the four of them were training.” He tells me. “Did you see who called the alarm?” I

asked him. “No unfortunately I didn’t, I was instructing Cory and Tomas on a new technique.” He says. “So, Kirk could

have taken a few steps towards the center of the field raised the alarm and used his wolf speed to get back into place,

before you turned to start instructing everyone.” I tell him. “I want you to have a casual conversation with Kirk, listen to

his voice, tone, inflection, anything that might spark the memory of what you heard and how you heard it.” I tell him.

“You got it.” He says. “That it for now, but nothing leaves this office. Got it?” They both nod their heads to the affirmative.

And we all go about our business.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

DRAKE: It's after diner and my phone rings, I check the caller ID and see that it's Alpha Lucas calling. "Hello Alpha Lucas,

what can I do for you? Jessie hasn't caused any problems has she?" "Not directly, she hasn't, but I have some

information that you need to hear to deal with her." He tells me. "Give me a couple minutes, before you continue, I need

to get to my office." I tell him. I turn to Carla, take her hand, and pull her with me. And we go to my office. "I am going to

put you on speaker Alpha Lucas, Carla is with me." I tell him and hit the speaker icon. "Hello Luna Carla." "Hello Alpha

Lucas." "Now that the pleasantries' are out of the way, what do you have for us Alpha Lucas?" I ask him. "I recorded this

so I will do my best to play it for you, I did send a copy to your Beta, and to James so if you don't catch everything they

will have it for you as well." He tells us. "The person Dedi called the lady, the lady asked [what and how], then the lady

asked [what about the other two], then the lady says [let's hope it stays that way], then the lady says [I'm thinking that

the kidnapping is the only way to go, there is a hunting cabin ¼ mile from the north boarder that nobody uses anymore,

just chloroform her and have one of the guys watch to make sure she stays put until the ball is over and I leave with my mate], then the lady says [I have to be, I don't want to spend any more time around that snotty bitch than I have to], and

then the lady says [go make sure the cabin is ready and nail the windows shut from the outside.] This conversation was

overheard by one of my omega maids as she was going about her duties. She has PTSD so this conversation upset her to

the point of causing a panic attack for her. She is ok now, but we are keeping her away from Jessie." He tells us. "I am

sorry that she had to go through that. I thank you for everything Alpha Lucas, I hope that the graduation goes well." I tell

him "Is there any way that you could send me a copy of that recording?" I ask him. "I will see what I can do." He says.

"Thank you again, and we look forward to seeing you at the ball in a week and a half." I tell him and say goodbye, and

hang up. I link Mitchell. \*"I need you to come to my office immediately!" "Yes Alpha."\* I close the link. "What are you

planning on doing?" Carla asked me. "Not completely sure yet." I tell her. About a minute later there is a knock on my

door. "Come." Mitch comes in. "You need to see me Alpha." "Yes, I just got a call from Alpha Lucas, seems we are on the

right track, and maybe a step or two ahead, but with what we learned from Chris earlier and with what I just heard from

Alpha Lucas, it was defiantly Jessie that orchestrated everything. "Do you know anyone that is close to Marla, and Dedi?

Jessie's two friends, it has to be someone we can trust." I say to him. "I don't, but I can ask some of the guys that I know I

can trust." He tells me. "Good, do it, I want to know when they make contact again if they do. They may not as the Kids

will be home on Saturday." I say thinking out loud. "Alpha, do we know what happened to Brent and Ronnie?" He asked

"Yes, sorry I forgot to tell you. What I am going to say stays here. Keska got her wolf, she is supposedly some sort of

hybrid, I do not know as I have not seen her yet. It was her wolf that killed both of them, and it is due to her hybrid form

that they died the way they did." I tell him. "But getting back to the issue of Jessie, I want you to go scout out the old

hunting shack up by the north boarder, try not to leave any tracks to close to the place, just watch the place and see if

anyone goes there, and does any work on it of any kind." I tell him. "I will put a small team with Darius to watch the

place." He says. I just nod. "Anything else Alpha?" he asked, "Maybe keep an eye on Kirk and Rodney, if they have any

interactions with Dedi or Marla." I tell him. "On it, anything else?" he asked. "No, I think that about covers everything." I

say to him. "Just a couple quick question, if I may?" "Shoot." "I would like to tell Frank, he is my go-to, he should know,

and how is it that Keska has her wolf? Isn't she to young?" "That's fine but no one else, the Doc believes it's because of

the trauma she has suffered, again this doesn't leave my office, but Jessie, and my mother both have rejected her as

family, and she has accepted both rejections, plus my mother used her wolf claws on her, and then the stabbing." "Yes

Alpha." "Thanks Mitch. I'll let you get to it." I say as he leaves my office. I look at my mate "let's head to bed, it's been a

day, and I am exhausted." I tell her. She just nods. And we head to bed.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 63**

[ 1,505 words ]

MITCHELL: I link Frank. "I know it's late but meet me in my office." "Ok, do I need to get anyone?" "No just you." "On

my way."\* I close the link. When I walk into my office Frank is already there. "So, what's up that couldn't wait for

tomorrow?" He asked me. "Again, what I tell you stays put." He nods in understanding. "First, Keska has her wolf, I know

she's young but apparently, she has gone through some shit and with the stabbing it brought her wolf out, plus she is

some kind of hybrid according to the Doc and the Alpha, and it was her wolf that killed Brent and Ronnie, case closed on

those two." I tell him. "I knew she went through something at Adrian's ceremony, she had a bruise on her face on the

way home." "That came from the Alpha's mother more than likely." I tell him. "We need to come up with someone we

can trust that can get close to Marla and Dedi, the Alpha wants them watched and, we need to keep an eye on Kirk and

Rodney to see if there is any interaction between them. Alpha Lucas called with some information that he thought the

Alpha needed to have; I don't know so don't ask I said to him as I noticed he was going to ask the question. "Alpha

wants the old hunting cabin up by the north boarder watched, not to get to close, just watched, just to see who goes

there and if they do any work on it" "Hopefully we will get more information soon." I say. "We will talk more in the morning. Get some rest." He nods and leaves my office. And I go to my quarters and go to bed.

LIAM: Yesterday was Keska's birthday, neither mom nor dad got her anything, I like to do leather burning so I made her a

few small trinkets that she could put on her new quiver for her arrows. I know it's not much, but I made them, and she was very appreciative of them. We basically have the rest of this week and next, then the ball, I am not looking forward to

it, I really don't know what I will be doing for it. I know that I will have to be present to meet and greet everyone but after

that I have no clue what I will be doing, or how I will be helping, it's not like there will be anyone coming of my age to

hang with. I will talk with Kes and see what she and Mackie will be doing. Maybe I can hang out with them. This year is

going to be strange; it will be the first time that Lissa and I will celebrate our birthday without Jessie, that is if Jessie finds

her mate at the ball, and I really hope she does, it has been nice around here without her causing drama.

KESKA: I am up early as per my usual and head downstairs to help with breakfast prep and service. I notice Liam by the

back door. "Hey little Bro. What's up?" I question him. "I am bored, and I wanted to talk to you about some stuff when

you are done." He says. "Ok, give me about 30 minutes, unless you want to help, you won't be bored then." "Sure, what

do I do?" "Start with picking up the used dishes from the pack dining room and bring them into the kitchen for me." I tell

him. "Ok." He heads out to the dining area to start his task. I start with rinsing the dishes that were used in the prep of

breakfast and get them in the dish washer, and I start washing the pots and pans that were used. When Liam comes in

with a stack of dishes, I rinse them and put them in the washer, once it's full I start it. "Done" I tell him; I leave the rest for

the kitchen staff to do. "What do you want to talk to me about." I ask him. He grabs my hand and drags me out to the

pool. "I want to know about this." He turns my hand over to show my scar. "I know you did something with Mackie, but I

don't know what." He says. "Basically, we did a blood oath to each other." I told him. "Ok, but what does that even mean." "It means that I and not father am Mackie's Alpha. Yes, we both still answer to father, as he is the Alpha of this

pack and we are both pack members, but she will always come to aide me, before she would go to father." I tell him.

"Can we do that to?" he asked me. "Liam are you sure, once this is done there is no going back from it. It's not like a

rejection that can be undone by reaffirming and drinking from the ceremonial cup." I tell him. "I get it, I still want to do it,

I don't have anything to look forward to, Lissa will probably be a Luna some where when the time comes, James is set to

inherit this pack, so where does that leave me?" He asked. "You never know, you could get mated to an only daughter of

an Alpha and take over that pack." I tell him. "Maybe, but I still want this." He says brushing his thumb over my scar. "Tell

me what, if after you turn 18 and you still feel the same, we will do it ok?" "Ok." "What else did you want to talk to me

about?" "What are you going to be doing during the ball?" "What do you mean?" "During the week when everybody is

here, what are you going to be doing?" "Well, if all goes well Mackie and I are hoping to have jobs by then so we will be

doing that, and it will depend on what those hours are. And we still plan on doing our aikido classes." I tell him. "Can I

come to? I mean to your classes, maybe even join them?" "I don't mind, but you will have to do extra work around the

pack to get the money, unless you are going to ask father."

KESKA: "Plus, you have to remember they are human and don't know about us, so no full strength in class." I tell him.

"No, I don't want to ask father, but if it's just me doing the extra work, do I have to split the money?" "Maybe talk with

Betsy, she may want to do extra stuff to, so than you both can still do the work together." I tell him. "Ok I will talk to her

on Saturday when we are scheduled to go do our rounds." He says. "What are you going to do now?" he asked, "I hope

that Mackie and I can have a driving lesson from Stephen." I tell him. "Mind if I tag along for the ride?" He smiles at his

own pun, and I can't help but chuckle at him. I link Mackie. "Do you mind if Liam hangs with us today?" "As long as he

doesn't distract us when we are in our lessons I don't care." "Ok, I will see you in a bit." I close the link. I feel the push of

a different link, so I open it. "Keska where are you?" "Out back by the pool with Liam." "Is there anyone else around?" I

look around to see if there is any one near the pool “Just us.” “Your father and I are on our way so don’t go anywhere

until we get there.” “Who was it” Liam asked. “Mom, and she is on her way with father.” “Why?” “Probably because they want to see my wolf, so now you know a secret and you need to keep it, Nana, Mackie, Mom, Father and the Doc, knows,

I do plan on telling Adrain soon but nobody else knows, well as far as I know.” I tell him. “Wow you have your wolf that is

so cool.” I just give him a half smile. If he understood what that actually meant I don’t think he would think it was cool. I

go into the changing area and strip out of my clothes and shift into Corla and come out. The look on Liam’s face is

priceless, I wish I could have a picture of it. “WOW!” he says. {Yes.} (\*Corla, please don’t nip him yet, I do want him to be

immune but not right now, ok?) (Ok.\*) “Hey, you talk?” {Yes}, then we hear a noise behind us Corla steps in front of Liam

in a protective stance and lets out a low growl. Both of our parents stood there. “Calm down, we’re not going to hurt you

or him.” Father says. Corla sits down then. “Dad, she talks!” Liam said with excitement in his voice.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 64**

[ 1,184 words ]

DRAKE: “How is it that you can speak?” I ask her. {I access her vocal cords and speak.} She sounds growly, and like she is

talking around a mouth full of a marbles, it’s like listening to Scooby doo. “Can you phase for me?” She stands, she is a

large red wolf, and she has a shimmery, watery outline to her body, a cross between ripples on the surface of a pond and

the heat coming off the highway on a hot summer day. Her body shimmers and disappears and reappears on the other

side of the pool, and then she comes back the same way. "Thank you, can you tell me about Brent and Ronnie?" I asked

her. {Ice, choked, held for ashes, to stab.} she stated. "Do you think that you could phase from inside a locked building?" I

asked her {Don't know, never tried.} she stated. "Would you try please?" {Sure}, We Walk over to the changing area for

the pool I open the door for her to walk in and I close and lock the door behind her. "Any time you are ready." I tell her.

The next thing I hear is Liam squeal and a splash. I turn to see the both of them in the pool. Well, I guess that answers

that question. "Not fair, now I have to go change." Liam tells her. As I watch she changes the water, and Liam is now

standing back on the pool deck and almost dry. "How did you do that?" he asked her. {I am water I can change and

command it.} she says. {Just like I can command and change fire.} she says. {Is there anything else you wish to know

father?} She asked, "Please tell us your name, I know Keska told us, but I would like a formal introduction from you if I

may." I tell her. {I am Corla.} she says in her growly voice. "Thank you." I say to her. {Welcome} she says as she bows her

head. Both Carla and I reach out to stroke her fur, she is softer than anything I have ever felt. "We'll leave you to your day

then." I tell them as I head back to my office. "After you shift back and get dressed Keska I have the invitations that need

to go in the mail, I would like it if you would take them to the post office for me." I heard Carla ask her.

KESKA: Corla just nodded at her and went back into the changing area and pushed me back, I got dressed and came

back out. Ruffled Liam's hair and we grabbed the invitations from mom and headed out front. I linked Stephen \*"Do you

have time for a driving lesson now?" "Let me check with miss Lilly.".... "I will be there in under 5 minutes." "Thank you."\* I

linked Mackie \*"Stephen will be here in under 5 minutes." "On my way."\* I close the link.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

MITCHELL: I was up by 6:30 and in my office by 7, I linked Darius, \*"I need you to come to my office please." "On my

way."\* I'm only waiting about 3 minutes, and Darius comes in. "What's up?" "I need you to take 3 others, not Kirk nor

Rodney, but seasoned guys that will follow orders, you guys will be doing a bit of recon for the Alpha and me, I am not

supposed to say this, but I know I can trust you. We know what happened to Brent and Ronnie. I can't say what, how, or who so please don't ask, just know they were involved in Keska's stabbing, so that they got their justice. You will be working in teams of two, two on two off I don't care how you set it up, but you will be watching the cabin up near the

north border, starting today. Get as close to the cabin to observe it, but do not leave a sent or prints close to it. We have

information that it maybe used in a kidnapping attempt, and we want to see who all may be involved." I tell him. "You

think Kirk and Rodney are part of what happened?" he asked me. "Among a few others, that's why we want you to watch

that cabin, take note, time of day or night and who, you will probably be on this for a month, hopefully less but just as a

precaution, we are saying a month." "I will need to know who you pick so I can take them out of rotation on guard duty."

I tell him. "Won't that look suspicious to the others?" He asked, "I will just say that they have a special assignment from

the Alpha to help with the security of the pack for the ball.” “That will work. I will take Clay, Brody, and Pete.” He tells me.

“Good, I will get them removed from the roster rotation.” I open a link to the three of the men. \*Clay, Brody, Pete Please

come to my office.” “Yes sir.”\* I get back from all of them. It only takes a couple minutes and all three of them come

walking into my office. “Thank you for being prompted, you three along with Darius will be on special assignment for the

Alpha. Starting immediately, you four will be watching the hunting cabin at the north boarder, I want detailed notes of

anyone that goes near that cabin, what they do, what you may overhear, but you have to stay out of sight, and stay down

wind of the cabin at all times. No one must suspect that you are there. Take pictures as well for documentation and proof

of anyone that goes near the place, do not interfere with them, just watch and document. Understood?” “Yes sir.” I get

from them “Darius will fill you in on the rest, but please don’t question him on his orders. Is that clear?” I ask them “yes

sir.” They answer. “Good dismissed.” “Just one more thing, dose anyone know anybody that can be trusted that can help

with an issue dealing with Marla and Dedi, Jessies two friends?” I asked them. “My sister, she is not a fan of either of them

they blamed her for some stuff in school that they pulled, and she is still looking to get them back.” Clay answers.

“What’s your sister’s name?” “Tara.” “Please link her and have her meet me at the Alpha’s office in 10 minutes.” I say to

him. “Ok.” I watch as his eyes glaze over, so I know he is doing what I asked of him. “Thank you, dismissed.” I watch as

they leave my office. I then link the Alpha \*Alpha, sorry to disturb you, but I have someone meeting me at your office in

about 10 minutes, I think she will be able to help with the Marla Dedi issue.” “Good I will be waiting.”\* I closed the link.

And head out. I get to the Alpha’s office and knock. “Come.” He calls out. I go in

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 65**

[ 1,220 words ]

DRAKE: “Moring Mitch. What do you have to report?” “Well I got the men set up with Darius, they should be heading out

as we speak, I told them that it would be two on two off and if they want to mix it up or how they want to handle it was

up to them, but that it was secret, The cover story for them being off the roster is that they are helping to deal with

security logistics for the ball.” I tell him. “Good. Now what about the Marla Dedi issue?” “Clay’s sister want’s a bit of

revenge on them for blaming her for something they did in school, what I don’t know, we will have to get that from her.”

“Hopefully they won’t suspect her, if there is bad blood between them.” I say to him. “We will just have to wait and get

the story from her.” He tells me. There is a knock on my door. “Come.” I call out. The door opens and a girl about James

and Jessie’s age is standing in the doorway, she is about 5’7” with ash blond hair and slate blue eyes, rather pretty.

“Come in.” I tell her. “Alpha, Delta. My brother Clay said I should come to your office, am I in trouble?” She asked as she

enters my office. “No sweet girl, just the opposite, I heard that you has some trouble with a couple of girls in school, I would like you to tell me about it.” I tell her. “Oh, ok, the P.E. teacher picks a person to be their helper every two weeks,

so every two weeks it's someone new, not everyone gets picked but pretty much most of the class does. I was picked,

and I guess Marla and Dedi didn't think that I should have been, because every time we would have team sports indoors

they would have someone distract me with a bunch of questions and they would mess with the score board, they would

subtract 1 or 2 points from the team they were rooting for, add 4-5 points to the opposite team and then tell the teacher

I was cheating for the team that was ahead and so the points would be removed and given to the other team. I got in

trouble with the teacher and lost my place as helper and got a C for a grade for the 2 weeks I was supposed to be the

helper for, which in turn brought my total grade down to a B-." She tells us. "Do you have proof of what you just told

us?" I asked her. "You can verify it with a couple of my friends, after the second time it happened I asked them to watch

the score table not the game. They made sure that they were on opposite sides and subs for the players." She tells us.

Smart girl I think to myself. "I will check your story with your friends, and if true I will get your grade changed, but I need

your help with an issue regarding Marla and Dedi, do you think you can help?" I asked her.

DRAKE: "I will do my best Alpha, what is it you need me to do?" "I will need you to get close to them, make them think

you are one of them, get them to trust you, so that they talk to you." I tell her. "I should be able to do that, they don't

know I know what they did, so I should be able to worm my way in." "I would like to let my parents and a couple of my

friends know though, so that they don't get mad at me." She says. "Are they the same friends that I will need to talk to,

to verify your story?" I asked her. She just nods her head. "You may indeed tell your parents, but I will tell your friends

when I talk to them to verify what happened in school. Just write down their names and I will make sure they understand

that you are helping me with an issue regarding them." I hand her a piece of paper and a pen. She writes down her

friends names and numbers. "Please tell your parents that what you are doing is secret, and the fewer people that know

the better, we are trying to catch them and punish them." I tell her as I reach for the paper she hands back to me. I read

the names she has written down. (May Thorsen and Julie Haff.) "Thank you." I say to her. "Thank you, Alpha." She says to me. "You may go." I say nodding my head to her. She leaves my office. "We need to know if Jessie was part of this issue

as well." I say to Mitch. He just nods. "Well, I have two interviews to conduct so I will let you get back to it." I tell him.

"Alpha." He says as he heads out the door.

KESKA: After driving to the post office and mailing the invitations, we talk Stephen into letting us drive to the human

town where Mackie and I go to the local restaurant and grab a couple of applications to fill out when we get home. This

fits the bill perfectly, they are looking for a dish washer, and a bus person, Mackie and I can do either one no problem.

The rest of the week fell into a routine of driving lessons, Aikido classes, running the obstacle course, and the archery

range. It was nice not having Jessie around and having to walk on eggshells around her. We couldn't get our driving test

scheduled until Wednesday of next week, so we just kept up with our lessons. That Saturday James, Jessie, Star, Wyatt

and Beta Gregg came home, and things sort of went back to me being on guard around Jessie at all times.

DRAKE: I have all the pieces in place, before the kids get home, the cabin is being watched, Tara is in place hanging out

with Marla and Dedi, and Jessie now that she is home. Marla and Dedi met up with Kirk and Rodney a couple of times,

the 5 of them went to the cabin, the report I got was that they made Tara and Rodney nail the windows shut. Now we just

need to wait and watch to see who does what so we can catch them in the act, and punish them accordingly, that is if

Corla lets us punish them before she takes matters into her own mouth so to speak. I link Keska. \*"Please come to my

office." "Yes father."\* I close the link.

KESKA: I was hanging out with Mackie and Liam at Nana's running the obstacle course when I got the link from father. "I

have to go." I tell them. "Where?" Liam asked, "Father wants to see me." I say. "You didn't do anything." Mackie says.

"Yes but with Jessie home who knows what I got blamed for." I say. "I don't think dad would do that to you anymore."

Liam says. "That has yet to be proven, but I can't keep him waiting, I'll be back, unless he decides I need to be put in the

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 66**

[ 1,382 words ]

KESKA: I say and head to the pack house. I head straight to his office, and knock. "Come." I open the door and walk into

his office. Beta Gregg is there as well. "May I ask what I have been accused of." I say as I enter. "Nothing." Father answers.

“Then why am I here?” I asked with a skeptical tone to my voice. “There are some things that I want you to be aware of,

and I want Corla not to overreact if something should happen.” Father says. I definitely don’t like the sound of this. “I

can’t speak for her.” I tell him. “Then let me speak to her.” He says. [Corla, father wishes to speak to you.] I tell her. {What

do you wish to speak to me about?} she asked. We both noticed the Beta jump a little. Which brought Corla’s attention

to him. She just watched him intently for a few minutes. “Corla, both James and Jessie will be shifting this coming week,

and there are some things you need to know about. First: I know Jessie is planning something, what that something is I

do not know fully, but what you need to know is that I have people in place to catch her, so please do not bite her.

Second: We know she has some people helping her, one of them is helping us to catch her, so again please no biting.” He

tells her. {I am just supposed to let them do whatever it is they are planning?} She scoffed at him. [Corla!] I scold her, [He

is still Alpha, we need to respect that, even if we don’t respect him.] I tell her. {Sorry Alpha.} she says. “No. not directly, I

just don’t want you to kill them, they have to be punished in front of the hole pack, so that everyone knows what they

did, and that we don’t and won’t tolerate it.” He says with a bit of harshness in his voice. {I have a solution, let Keska stay

at Nana’s and go to work at the human restaurant, that way she is away from Jessie and everything that she might pull.}

“I didn’t know she wants to work in the human town.” Father says in surprise. [Thanks Corla, we weren’t going to tell him

that.] I tell her. [Why not tell him, he will know eventually.] she tells me. {Keska will defend herself against anyone that will

try and hurt her, she will use her Aikido skills, I will help but I will not kill anyone, but I will not let them take her either.}

She tells father. {But, with that being said, what will happen to Jessie?} She asked father. "She will be publicly punished, as

will the others." He tells her. {I don't much care about the public aspect of it, as long as SHE does get punished this time.}

She tells him. She turns to look at Beta Gregg. {You're awfully quiet.} She says to him. "I'm just surprised." He says.

{Surprised about what?} "That you are here." {Honest at least.} {What's your take on all this?} She asked him. "I don't

know what to think, it's a lot to take in. Your father filled me in on Brent and Ronnie, and how they were found, that's a

bit intimidating to say the least." He says to her. {It was meant to be. Left as a warning and a message to others, we will

retaliate if we are hurt.} She says. We watch a shutter go through him. {But does not answer the question.} She says. "I

think that when we catch them, the public punishment, that Jessie will get is fair, and for the guys depending on their

involvement in your stabbing, public execution is fair." {Do you think that public humiliation will work on Jessie? Or will it

just make her worse?} She asked. "That's a hard call." {True but if you don't have the right punishment for her, she won't

change.} She tells them. "She has a point." Beta Gregg says looking at father. "Corla, can you phase Keska?" Father asked.

{Don't know, haven't tried.} "Please try, take her across the room." I felt a strange rippling across my skin, and everything went blurry like looking at everything as if I was under water, and then I was across the room from them next to the

conference table. {Guess that answers that question.} she says and phases back. "WHAT ARE YOU?" Beta Gregg asked

with a touch of fear in his voice. {Phase wolf.} she answers like it's the most natural thing in the world, but he seems

shaken by it.

KESKA: {Have I answered all your questions and satisfied your curiosity?} she asked father. "Yes at least for the time

being." He says. {Good. Bye.} and she recedes to the back of my mind. "Is there anything else father?" I asked. "No, but

Keska don't give us away to the humans." He says. "I will be careful." I tell him. And leave his office.

DRAKE: "Gregg, are you ok?" I ask him. "I need a drink." He says. I get up and pour him a shot of good scotch. It's not

anything that can get a wolf drunk by any means, but it can steady the nerves. I walk over and hand it to him. "What's wrong" I ask him. "You didn't tell me she could do all that. And if she did kill Brent and Ronnie, the way you say, she is

dangerous." "And what exactly is a phase wolf?" he says and asked me. "She is not dangerous, it's Keska after all, and I

don't know exactly, we would have to talk to Lilly she would probably know more about that, her mate was a phase

elemental." I tell him.

KESKA: The rest of the week flew by; the phone was ringing almost nonstop with everyone calling to RSVP., for the ball as

there was no time to send it back through the mail. Wednesday night after dinner I called Adrian. "Hey Cuz., I know you

don't recognize this number but it's Keska and this is my new number, please call me when you get this." And I hung up

to wait for his call back. I only had to wait maybe 5 minutes or so. I answered right away. "Hey Adrian." "Hey Sweets,

what's up?" "Is Kina with you?" I asked "Yes." "Please put me on speaker, I only want to say this once, and just know that

not everyone here knows this yet, and Nana Lilly wants to keep it to a minimum. At least for the time being." I say. "Ok, is

there anyone else that you want to hear this?" He asked. "I don't mind Rex knowing, but that is all." I say. "Kina is linking

him, so hold on.” He tells me. “Ok, just let me know when he’s there.” “Speaking of Kina, how is she, and when is she

due?” I asked. “She has about another 10-10 ½ week left.” Adrian says. “Ok Keska, Rex is here.” I hear Kina say. “Hi Rex.”

“Hi Keska.” “So, as I told Kina and Adrian, please keep what you are about to hear a secret.” “I can do that.” “I have my wolf, I am a hybrid, I’m what Nana calls a Phase wolf, but to be more specific, I am an elemental phase wolf, what exactly

that means I can’t say as I don’t really know myself.” I tell them. “Keska I’m happy for you that you got your wolf, but I

know you went through some shit to have her so early.” Adrian says. “Thank you, Adrian. I will let you see her when you

come for the ball, but we will have to do it at Nana’s.” I tell them. “We look forward to it. But we have to get going

sweets, we have warriors to sort and wolves to pick for the ball.” He tells me. “Love you, bye.” “Love you too, bye.” We

both hang up.

CARLA: I have been fielding calls left and right about the ball, I honestly thought that the instructions were clear. But I

guess some peoplesidea of mated guards, don’t seem to match what those words actually say

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 67**

[ 1,353 words ]

I was getting the same question, Why mated guards, Why mated guards? Why mated guards indeed, because when you

first find your mate the bond can be overwhelming, and a newly mated guard will not have their head on straight they

will want to mark and mate with his or her mate instead of making sure the pack is secure against rouge attacks. I have

seen it happen way to many times, which is why the royal decree states mated guards to accompany those that are

attending the ball. But no one has declined the invitation so we will be at full capacity for the ball. That can be both a

blessing, and a curse at the same time. There is the best chance for many mates but at the same time more chances for

trouble, as well. I have also been adding to the food list with every new call to ensure we have enough to go around. Per my calculations that will be 168 extra guards 12 from each pack and we invited 14 packs, plus 336 unmated wolves, again

12 each male and female, from 14 packs, and then the unmated ranked wolves from each pack which I have to sit down

and count out from my notes but just ruffly we will have an extra 540 people here. So that is a lot of extra food to feed

everyone, the accounts are going to take a hit this year.

DRAKE: Friday morning after breakfast the first of our guest arrive. Adrian, Kina, Rex, with their 36 pack members. The

family greeted them on the front of the pack house steps. "Adrian, Kina, good to see you again, Rex." I shake hands with

them, and then they all give the kids hugs. "Mitchell will take the guards and get them settled. And Marie will show the

others to their rooms." I tell them. "Keska will show you three to your rooms. I tell them. The rest of the morning and

early afternoon went the same way, I had the kids taking turns showing the Alphas, Lunas, and higher ranks to their

rooms. While Mitchell delt with the guards and Marie one of our omegas show the rest to their rooms. Tonight, will be

the first of the dressier parties as the meet and greet. And Wednesday will be the second as that is actually the twins'

birthday. The last to arrive were the Royals, I'm not going to lie, it was a bit intimidating having them here, but they were

very respectful when meeting the family. I just hope that all goes well, and Jessie behaves, so we don't have any major or

embarrassing issues.

JESSIE: I only get one shot at getting rid of Kes. And I have to make it count. I have Kirk and Rodney on the roster for

guard duty for the meet and greet for tonight, I know she will try to put herself in the kitchen to help so it should be a bit

easier to grab her from there as she is coming and going, setting food out. I got Tara to steal a bottle of chloroform from

the clinic for the guys to have. After tonight I won't have to see her or put up with her the ugly bitch.

KESKA: After greeting all the guests, I felt a bit antsy again, (Corla, what's going on?) I ask her. (Don't know, maybe all the

extra energy and excitement around the Ball.) she says. (I want Adrian, Kina, and Rex to meet you.) I tell her. (And Camron

to if he wants.) I tell her. (Anyone you want immune?) She asks me. (Adrian, I would also like Kina to be, but we can't she

is pregnant. I guess the other two would be up to them.) I tell her. (Do you know where they put Alpha Camron?) she

asked (I am not 100% sure but I can find out easily enough.) I tell her. (Well let's get this show on the road.) she tells me. I

link Mackie. \*"You busy?" "No, why?" "Meet me at Nana's in about 10 minutes, if all goes well I am going to shift and

show Corla to Adrian, Kina, Rex, and Camron if he wants to see her." "You are taking a risk showing her to so many

people." "I know, but I believe I can trust them, besides father had her phase me in front of the beta, and I don't know

that he will actually keep his mouth shut." "I'll be there."\* I open a link to Liam. \*"I am going to go to Nana's in about 10

minutes want to join me?" "Sure, I'm in."\* I open a link to Nana. \*"Nana, please don't get upset with me but I want to

show Corla to Adrian, Kina, Rex, and Alpha Camron if he is open to it. But we have to do it at your house." "How could I

be upset with you sweet child, bring them here when you are ready." "In 10 minutes?" "That is fine." "Thank you, Nana

love you." "Love you too."\* I close the link and call Adrian. His phone rings a couple of times and he picks up. "Hey

Keska, what's up?" "I talked to Nana and if can get Rex and Kina and meet me there in about 10 minutes I will show you what we talked about earlier on the phone." I tell him. "I will make sure we are there." He tells me and we hang up. I then

link Marie; she has the list of all the rooms where all the Alphas are staying. "Marie, can you please tell me what room

Alpha Camron is in." "He is in one of the guest suites on the second floor by your fathers office." "Thank you." I close the

link, and head to his room. I knock on his door.

CAMRON: I hear a knock on my door, it's before lunch, and I didn't order any service. "Who is it." I call out. "Keska."

Comes the answer. I open the door to see her standing there in a pretty sundress that complements her hair color. "Hello,

come in, what can I do for you?" "I would like to share a secret with you, but not here, I can't say much, but if you are

interested please come to Nana's with me." She says. "May I bring Chase? He loves your Nana." "Do you trust him to

keep his mouth shut? I don't mean to be harsh but very few people are privy to what you will learn, and the fewer the

better as of now, when the time is right more will know but right now the number is small." She tells me. "Chase" I call

out to him "Yes Alpha." "I need you to come with me, and I also need you to keep what you see and hear to yourself, can

you do that without me having to Alpha command you?" I asked him. "Yes Alpha." I turn back to Keska. "You have your

answer." I said, "I take it that you are interested in this, then?" "Yes Keska I am." "Thank you, please come with me then." I

turn to Chase, "We are going to your favorite person's home. So, let's go." I tell him. He just smiles like a kid that was

told he gets his favorite toy. We both follow her out and down to the front of the house, we walk across the paved drive

and over to the copes of trees and follow a path that brings right to Miss Lilly's backyard.

KESKA: I lead Alpha Camron and his guard Chase to Nana's house. "Nana, I'm here." I call out as we enter the back yard. I

see Mackie, Nana, Liam, Adrian, Kina, and Rex all come from inside the house, followed by Stephen. "Dear, I had Stephen

put up a divider over on the side of the house for you to change behind." Nana says. "Thank you Nana." I say and head

to the side of the house,

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 68**

[ 1,436 words ]

I step behind the divider, undress, and change into Corla. We come out and walk to the back yard where everyone is

waiting.

LILLY: "Corla, I would also like to invite two more people to this intimate gathering you put together." {Who would that

be?} She asked me. “Keska’s Great uncle, and his Beta.” I tell her. {I am ashamed that we did not think of them. We must

apologize to them when they arrive.} she says. I link Carson and Calen. \*<sup>“I need the two of you to come to my home, it’s</sup>

important.” “On my way.” “I will be there in under 5 minutes.”\* I get the response from them. “They are on their way.” I

tell her. She nods her head. I watch as she goes to each person in the group so they can touch her, get a sense of, and

about her. She nuzzles Liam, almost knocking him over. “Hey, come on, don’t knock me over.” He tells her. I hear a car

door close out front, and I send Stephen to check and make sure it’s our invited guest and not someone being nosy. He

come back with Carson and Calen.

KESKA/CORLA: We turn as we smell two more people come in from behind us. We immediately go to nuzzle Uncle

Carson. {We are sorry that we did not tell you about us sooner.} “Thank you, but who are you and how is it that you

speak?” He asked. {I am Corla, I am Keska’s wolf.} She tells him. “How is it that you are here?” he asked. {Come everyone

please gather, he is asking questions that I am sure you all have, I will answer as best as I can, but I only wish to answer

the same questions once and not repeat myself. I am a hybrid, as Nana says a phase elemental wolf, what that is I am not

sure, as I think I am the only one of my kind. I do not wish to scare anyone, but I know I can control both the elements of

fire and water.} she turns to Adrian, {When Keska called you and told you she had been stabbed, I am the one that killed

the ones responsible. I turned one into an ice statute, I turned the other one into a pile of ashes, they both got what they

deserved for hurting us.} she says to them. She turns to Camron {Keska respects you; do you have questions?} she asked

him. "How is it that you can speak? I know he asked that, but you didn't answer it yet." {I access her vocal cords and use

them the same way your wolf speaks through you.} {If I may, I would like to make the acquaintance of your wolf as well.} We watch as his eyes glaze over. "I will not shift, as that would be disrespectful to the Alpha here, without his permission,

but Cereus is pleased that you would like to meet him." We watch as his eyes turn dark and we hear a deep gravelly

voice, (Hello Corla I am pleased to make your acquaintance.) He says. {I thank you for agreeing to meet me.} She slowly

walks towards Camron, and takes a deep breath in taking in his scent. And then nods her head at him. Camron reaches

out and pets her. (How is it that you are this soft?) Cereus asked. {I think that it has something to do with the water and

maybe the phasing. Other than that I am unsure.} she answers back. She then goes to Adrian. {Cousin, I would like to meet

Coros as well if I may.} "I will not shift as a sign of respect to uncle, but Coros does want to meet you." And we watch

as his eyes turn dark. (Hello cousin, I am sorry that you had to go through the pain that brought you to us this early, but we are happy you are here.) {One day soon I hope to run with you.} she tells him. (And I, with you as well.) he tells her.

"Who all knows about you Corla? I don't want to miss speak in front of someone." Uncle asked. {Other than those that

are here, the Dr., Beta Gregg, though he has not actually seen me he knows, mom, and father, and that's it.} She says

{There is a reason to please keep it quiet,} She says as she makes her way over to Kina and sits down by her. {Father

believes that Jessie is going to try and pull something soon, and if she knows then she may not or she may try to change

what her group are planning. Father says that if they do catch her she will be punished, and I want that more than

anything else, but I also want her to change, right now she would not be a good anything, and it is very possible she may

become a luna somewhere. I would not want her rejected by any means, but she needs to learn a lesson in humility if she

is to be a good at anything.} She tells everyone present.

LILLY: "I know that she will want to make some of you immune to her bite, I happen to know that on top of her

controlling, fire and water, let's clear some things up about that, she controls them, she cannot conjure them, like a which, so if there is a bond fire and it gets out of control she can stop it, she can reduce the damage done by a flood. She

also has poison, and yes it can be deadly, but if she just nips you, you will become ill and then immune to it, I have made

up some herb bundles for those she nips. It will help minimize the down time you will have. Kina, although she wants you

to be immune she will not nip you as you are with pup. I know you did not want that to get out just yet, so to the rest of

you that is another secret to keep. Liam, Mackie, she will nip you after the ball so that you will have time to recover and

not have to do much until you are better. To those she does nip, it will probably be towards the time you leave, as then

you will be home when you are feeling sick." "So please stop by here before you head out to go home, and I will give

you enough herbs for a week of tea to be made, twice a day for the week and that should be enough to get you through.

Once you are well you can have your Dr.'s draw your blood and make the anti-venom from it." I tell them.

KESKA/CORLA: We get up from sitting beside Kina and take a good long look at the obstacle course, then we turn and

look at Nana, She just nods. And we take off at a run and hit the course in wolf form, when it comes to the jumps we

phase, and we can get higher and go farther than if I did it normal. We did it faster than normal as well. Then both Adrian

and Camron took a shot at it, then Chase, Mackie and Liam all took their turns, Mackie and Liam bet the times of the

others, but they have been doing it longer. "We need to incorporate an obstacle course in our training of the warriors."

Both Adrian and Camron said after they ran it. I get a push in my head, so I open the link. "Where are you?" I get from

Father. "I am at Nana's with Adrian, Kina, Alpha Camron his guard Chase, Liam, Mackie, Uncle Carson, and his Beta

Calen. We are having a bit of fun with the obstacle course." I tell him. "Of course you are. It's time for lunch, so bring

everyone with you and come to the pack house." "Yes Father." {"It's time for lunch, father wants everyone to head to the

pack house.} This time I am speaking through Corla; it is strange to say the least. Then we head to the side of the house

and step behind the divider, and I feel the now familiar push, and I am back to me, and get redressed and head back to

the back yard and head up to the pack house, Uncle and his Beta drive, but the rest of us walk through the copes of trees

and then cross the drive,

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 69**

[ 1,394 words ]

and into the house. Mackie and I start heading into the kitchen to start helping right away when we get in. As we pass

the dining hall I see three of the most hansom guys I have ever seen in my life, the stand a head above everyone else, I

believe that they are the Lycan princes', But I have to go.

\*\*\*\*\*  
\*\*\*\*\*

TREVER: I am the youngest of my three brothers, I am a prince of the Royal Lycan family, My older brothers, myself and

my best friend Dutch (He is third born in his family of Gamma's.) were sent to this mating ball by our parents in hopes

that we would find our mates, and they said that it was only polite that we come as this is Lilly's pack and we need to

show our respect, and then if Barrett did find his mate, they could step down and let my brother take over, as he is the

oldest at 22. Then Trent at 20, and me at 18. I am hoping that both of my brothers do find their mates. That will leave me

free and clear to travel, I just want to see the world, experience the different cultures and flavors the world has to offer. I

have been on edge though since we got here, I keep smelling a hint of mint chocolate coffee, and it is driving me crazy.

Every time I try to follow it, it seems like I am just a little too late to see who or what has that mouthwatering smell, it's

frustrating.

BARETT: I am feeling on edge, and have been since we got here, My beast won't settle, and it is making me edgy and

cranky, I go find the Alpha of the pack. "Alpha Drake, I am in need of a run, I was wondering where I might go." I asked

him. "Of course, your highness, we have a rather large wood, and a small lake that you may find peaceful. Just head back

towards the gate you entered when you arrived and follow it west and south." He tells me. "Thank you." I link my

brothers. "I am going for a run, you both are welcome to join me, but I need to take the edge off before the Meet and

Greet tonight, I will be back before lunch. I tell them. "I'm young with you; my beast won't stop pacing." Trent sends

back. "My brother Trent will be joining me." I tell Alpha Drake. "I have linked the head guard to let him know that you will

be running, and he has informed the rest, so you should be fine and not interrupted." He tells me. "Thank you." Just then

Trent appears at my side. We head out the front door of the pack house and in the direction the Alpha gave us, as we get

near the gate I see a tall wolf, rather muscular, with brownish hair and honey-colored eyes, strong masculine features with

an air about him that says he doesn't take shit from anyone. I can respect that. "Your highnesses I have a backpack for

you, and you can change over there." He says pointing to the side of a large rectangle looking building. "Thank you, and

you are?" I asked him. "I'm Mitchell, I am the head warrior of the Blue Crescent Pack." He says calmly. "Nice to make your

acquaintance Mitchell, I hope that our guards are fitting in, and not causing any problems." I say to him. "Better than

some your highness." He says, "But it's nothing I can't put to rights." He tells me. "We will be back before lunch." I tell

him. He just nods. We go to the side of the building strip, change, and head out.

TREVER: I get the link from my brother, but I opt out of the run, I just kind of want to explore the grounds and see if I

can't find that delicious smell. I link Dutch to see if he wants to join me. We see a lot of Alpha apparents' about and

chatting among themselves. I overhear just a bit of a conversation between two girls. I stop, as does Dutch. "Do they

know yet who stabbed her." The girl with ash blond hair asked, "Apparently they do, and they were punished." The girl

with darker hair answered. "Was Jessie behind it?" The ash blond asked, "That I don't know, they haven't said anything."

The other girl answered. (I wonder who got stabbed, and wasn't Jessie one of the twins', there is a mystery here for sure,

but it's not my business to get involved in.) I thought to myself. We continue to walk around the grounds exploring, and

come across a door that looks to open into nowhere, so I open it and surprise it's a garden, we go in. It is set up like one

of those meditation mazes. Only this is with flower beds and not hedges, it helps to ease my beast some, so I just wander

through it. Until the call for lunch comes. I link my brothers to see if they are back yet. \*"they just called for lunch are you

back yet?" "Yes we are just coming in now, where are you?" "In the garden maze, it's inside the square." "What?" "Just

look around, you will see doors that seem to open to nothing, open one."\* I hear the door opening and turn to see my

brothers entering the garden. "Wow this is nice." Trent says. "We may have to figure out how to incorporate something

like this at the palace." Barrett adds. I just nod. We all leave the garden and head upstairs to freshen up and get ready for

lunch.

DRAKE: As lunch gets under way, I happen to see Keska in her usual place helping in the kitchen like she is a common

omega, I shake my head and go get her and Mackenzie and put them in the dining room to eat with the rest of the

families and all our guests. I clink my glass to get everyone's attention "Attention Please! Attention, I just want to thank

you all for coming to celebrate the mating ball and my first set of twins' 18 birthday, I know that most of you have

traveled from a great distance, so we have left the afternoon open so you may rest before the Meet and Greet tonight,

the festivities will start at 7:0'clock tonight dinner will be buffet style. Again, thank you for coming and may the goddess

bless you, with finding your mates. Enjoy lunch.” I then sit down as a signal for everyone to go ahead and eat.

TREVER: I am watching the Alpha as he enters what appears to be the kitchen and comes out with two girls marching in

front of him, and then it hits me that wonderful smell of mint chocolate coffee, I hear my beast say mate in my head. Oh

great. I link my brother. \*\*Barett I have a problem, the girl the Alpha just came out of the kitchen with is my mate.”

“Which one?” “The one that takes after Marsh.” “She does, doesn’t she, must be related to Lilly.” “Not the point, she’s

not 18 yet. And she is sitting with the Alpha’s family, I don’t recall her being there when we met everyone.” “He did say

the one of his kids was showing another guest to their room, so it had to be her.” “Damn and the full moon is tonight as well, we will have to talk to the Alpha.” “And just what do we say, we can’t take her, she has at least one if not two years

to go before she is 18. It’s going to drive me nuts if I can’t have her close to me.” “Calm down little bro, we will figure

something out.”\* I nod my head. Then I get a link from Dutch \*\*“The girl that came out with the Alpha, and is sitting with

the Gamma family is my mate.” “Welcome to the nightmare, the other one is my mate. And I believe that they are both

underage, so we are going to have to suffer and wait for them.”\* I send back to him. He just groans, and I nod my head

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 70**

[ 1,302 words ]

KESKA: After lunch was over and people started to disperse Mackie and I started to help with cleaning up and getting the

dishes into the kitchen we made sure that the dishwasher stayed full and running until all the dishes were done, and

helping with the logistics for the buffet set up for tonight. Mackie and I went out to the marquee to see how it was being

set up so we could do up the diagram on where everything would go on the tables, the hot dishes vs the cold dishes and

the sweet desserts. After getting that done we went to my room for a nap, we knew it was going to be a long night, at

least mom and father were smart enough to make it a no casual hook ups before finding your actual mate, yes the Pack

house is sound proofed but not every building was.

BARETT: After lunch was done, I approached the Alpha. "I would like to speak with you in private if I may." "Of course,

your highness, please come to my office." I had received a second link from my brother to let me know that the other girl was Dutch's mate. I follow him upstairs and halfway down a hallway, he opens the interior door, and we walk into his

office. Right away I notice the windows that look down on the garden we were in earlier. "Please have a seat." He waves

his hand at the chairs in front of his desk. I sit in the first one. "What may I do for you?" He asked me. "I would like to

know how old the two girls are that came out of the, I believe kitchen? With you are." I said "Ah yes Keska and her best

friend Mackinze, Keska just turned 16 and I believe Mackie will turn 16 next month. Why do you ask?" "You know that we

are Lycan's, and as such, when we turn 18 we will know our mates when we meet them, no matter what their age is, both

girls are mates to my youngest brother and his best friend Dutch. I just need to know how long they would have to wait

before they could claim them." I told him. He blanched visibly.

“Two more years.” He says in almost a whisper. “Thank you. You needn’t worry the boys will be perfect gentlemen with

them. And they will wait, as I don’t believe that neither one of them wants to deal with Marsh.” I tell him. “Who is Marsh?” he asked me. “Marsh is Lilly’s cousin twice removed, but he still knows the family secret of how to kill one of us,

so he does get all the respect he deserves.” I tell him. He just nods his head. “But I have taken enough of your time, I will

go back to my room now and rest before the festivities tonight.” I see his eyes glaze over and a knock come at the door.

“Stacy will show you back to your room your highness.” I nod and leave his office and follow the omega.

BARETT: Once back in my room I link my little brother. \*<sup>“</sup>Trever, her name is Keska, the other one’s name is Mackinze, and

you will have to wait two years, sorry little bro. Keska just turned 16 and Mackinze will turn 16 next month.” “Thank you,

for finding out for us. It’s going to suck but I guess there is nothing we can do about it unless he is willing to let her go

early.” “I don’t think that is likely, he visibly blanched when I told him she was your mate. Get some rest we will talk

later.”\* I close the link, strip out of my clothes, take a quick shower, and pass out.

JESSIE: I am giddy with anticipation. I know my mate is here, I keep getting whiffs of spice, like all the different spices that

go into making a home-made pumpkin pie, it makes my mouth water. And I can’t wait to hear that they have that bratty

bitch sister of mine locked up in the cabin. Everything is falling into place and at the end of next week I will be out of here

and I will never have to see her again. YES!!

JAMES: I know my mate is here, with us being this close to turning 18 I can get whiffs of her scent, and I can feel my wolf

actually starting to stir within me. I also know that Jessie is up to something I am going to have to get with dad and find

out what all he has going on where she is concerned. I also feel like there is something up, different about Keska too, I

will have to ask him about that. But right now, I am just going to take a shower and sleep for a while, then when I get up I

will go talk to dad. I am also thinking who I will take as my Beta, I have a feeling that Star is going to be leaving so I will

need a Beta, maybe Mitch, he has proven himself worthy of the position and he is loyal to the pack. Then I will put Frank

in as head warrior he deserves that honor as well. But sleep first, the rest will fall where it will.

JAMES: I am up by 5, and head to my dad's office, I knock and wait for him to answer. "Come." I hear him call, I open the

door, walk in, and take a seat in front of his desk. "So, what's the latest on the Jessie front?" I ask him. "Straight to the

point, but I was expecting to have this conversation earlier, like Monday earlier." He says. "I know I'm a bit late to the

dance." I say, "But at least I showed up." I tell him. "We put some pieces together, and we have Kirk, and Rodney under

surveillance, plus Dedi and Marla." He tells me. "How about Keska, how is she doing, and does she know about Jessie?" I

asked him. "There is a lot that is going on with Keska, what I am going to tell you stays here. Keska has her wolf, she is a

hybrid, across between your grandfather Rickard and wolf. It was her wolf that killed Brent and Ronnie, I know this is news

to you, as you didn't know they were dead, but Jessie did, because Marla told her. I will fill you in on how she did it later.

Yes Keska has been made aware of things, we don't have specifics, but we have people in place to catch them in the act if

things should happen to go bad, and if you do notice something I want you to link Darius. I don't want you to interfere with anything. There is something else you need to know, Keska is the fated mate to the youngest prince, and Mackinze

is mated to his best friend. I just hope we can catch them before anything bad happens to her, I don't want a war with

the royal family. I also hope we have enough evidence against Jessie when we do catch them that she will spend weeknights in the cells." He says. "That seems a bit harsh don't you think?" I ask. "She seemed to think it was funny when

Keska had to spend a week in the cells, let's see how funny she thinks it is when she has to do it." He says. I can't argue

with that. "You can tell Wyatt but no one else." He says to me. "Wow nothing like dropping bombs left and right." I say,

shaking my head. He just nods his.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 71**

[ 1,180 words ]

JAMES: I leave his office, and head back to my room on the way I link Wyatt. "I have information you will want to know,

but we have to keep it to ourselves." "Meet me at my room." "On my way." I close the link and enter my room. I am

getting dressed for the party, there is a knock on my door. "Come." I call out. "What's the big news, that we have to keep

hush hush." Wyatt asked as he enters and closes the door behind him. "Get ready for a bomb shell." I say to him.

"What?" "Our sisters are fated mates to the youngest prince and his best friend Dutch." I tell him He lets out a long

whistle. "No shit?" He exclaims "No shit." "How did you find that out?" "Dad just told me, I went to his office to check up

on the whole Jessie issue, and he drops that bomb on me." I tell him. "Wow" he says shaking his head, and I just nod

mine. "What did he say about the whole Jessie issue though?" "He says he has people on it, and now it's a wait and watch game. But if she is the prince's fated mate, he will call for blood if anything happens to her." I tell him. "But dad

says that if we notice anything we are to link Darius, and to stay out of it." I tell him. He just shakes his head, and I nod

mine. We leave to go down for the party.

KESKA: I am up at about 5:30-6:00, I put on a smocked topped sun dress, nothing fancy, but pretty enough, in a paisley

pattern done in shades of green and some soft browns. I will after all be helping in the kitchen, so Sarah doesn't have to

go it alone, with the omegas. Mackie is dressed similar to me in a sun dress, again nothing too dressy, we leave the fancy

stuff to the 18 and older crowd. We head downstairs and right into the kitchen to start helping, since we already had the

chart, it was just a matter of getting the right size hot plates and warmers in the right spot to fit the tables, for the buffet.

As I was going back and forth, I noticed one of the princes' standing by the door between the kitchen and the Marquee,

"Mackie, that's one of the princes'" I whisper to her nodding my head in his direction. We turn slightly and see his friend

has joined him. \[Heads up Keska, Kirk and Rodney are close, and I smell Jessie on them.\] Corla tells me. \[I understand,

but I still have to do my duty.\] I tell her. I make my way back towards the kitchen to grab a smaller hot plate to switch it

out with one that was put in the wrong place. But I don't make it to the kitchen, in between I am grabbed from behind

and a rag is put over my mouth and nose. Then everything goes dark, I vaguely feel myself being lifted, and then

nothing.

JESSIE: I went up to my room to shower after handing the keys off to Rodney. I get a link from them, and they have her

and are taking her to the cabin. YES!! \_“Make sure to put the silver cuffs on her and get Tara and that Chris to stay and

keep an eye on her.” “Aren’t the silver cuffs a bit much? She doesn’t have a wolf yet.” “It will help to keep her weak and

not cause problems. You two need to come back immediately after getting her to the cabin so you won’t be missed.” \_ I

linked Kirk. Then continue to get ready for the party. I have an ocean blue bodycon dress with beading and low draped

back, it sets my hair and eyes off, I do an ombré blue eye shadow, black mascara, and a medium coral lip gloss. Damn I

look hot.

MACKIE: I am waiting for Kes to come back with the hot plate, she should have been back, so I head to the kitchen to

look for her. I get stopped by the prince and his friend. “Hello pretty lady.” The prince’s friend says. “Hello.” “My friend

and I were wondering if you and your friend would join us for dinner tonight” “I will ask her, but I have to find her first.” I

said “What do you mean? Is she missing?” the prince asked. “I don’t know, she went to get something from the kitchen

and has not come back yet, but she also may just be caught up with helping with the food or something, she’s like that

sometimes.” I tell him. “Please go check, we will wait here for you.” He says. I continue my way into the kitchen. I am

looking around and don’t see Kes anywhere, I go to Sarah. “Have you seen Kes? She was coming to get that smaller hot

plate” I say as I point to the plate. “No dear I have not seen her since the two of you first came in.” she tells me. “Shit!” I

swear under my breath. I try to link her. \_“Keska, where are you?”\_ I get no response. I link Nana. \_“Nana, Kes is missing,

and the prince and his friend want us to have dinner with them.” “I don’t know what to do.” I send to her. “Where are

you Mackie?" "In the kitchen." "I will be there in a couple of minutes." "Thank you." \_ I close the link. Grab the hot plate

and wait for Nana.

LILLY: After getting the link from Mackie, I take Stephen with me as I head to the kitchen. I see her standing holding a hot

plate as if her life depended on it. I would have chuckled if the situation weren't as dire as it was. If the crown prince wants to have dinner with you, you don't say no! "Mackie, go put the plate out." I tell her. "But what do I tell them, they

are waiting, and she isn't here." She says worriedly. "I will come with you and will help defuse the situation." I tell her. We

start walking to the door between the kitchen and the marquee. As soon as we step through the door I am hit the scent

of the royal pack. "Prince Trevor, Gamma Dutch, how nice to see you both again." I say to them. "Lilly it is nice to see you

as well." Trevor says as he steps in to give me a hug. "Lilly." Dutch reaches his hand out to shake mine. And they both nod

to Stephen. "I hear you want to have dinner with my grand pup, and Mackinze here." I say to them. "Yes, we would

consider it an honor to have them join us." Trevor says. I turn to Mackie, "Go finish." I tell her. She just nods and

continues into the marquee. "Gentlemen please come with me." I say to them.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 72**

[ 1,181 words ]

PETE: I see movement in the distance, I climb a tree near the camp site to get a better look and to make sure that if the

wind changes, they won't smell me, as I am a bit closer to the cabin, but it's the only way we could do what we need to

do, is by climbing the trees nearby. I look through the night scope and see Kirk and Rodney Kirk is carrying what looks to

be an unconscious person. As they get closer, I see that it is Keska, and they have silver cuffs on her. I link Darius right

away. \_ "Darius, Kirk, Rodney, Tara, and Chris are going into the cabin, it looks like Keska is unconscious and they have her

in silver cuffs." "Continue to monitor, I will let Mitchell know." "Roger that." \_ I open a link to Clay. \_ "Stay down and stay

put, I linked Darius, and he says to continue to monitor for now." "Copy." \_ I close the link.

DARIUS: I open a link to Mitchell \_ "Pete just linked me they have Keska at the cabin, he said she looks to be unconscious,

and they have silver cuffs on her." "That's a bit harsh. But I suppose they don't want to take any chances that she may

cause a problem." "What's the next step?" "I will inform the Alpha, just keep monitoring, I will get back to you." \_

MITCHELL: I link the Alpha. \_ "Alpha, they have made their move, they have Keska and have taken her to the cabin, they

have also put her in silver cuffs, what do you want us to do?" "I want you to get dressed to come to the party, then when

Kirk and Rodney get back, we can get them put in the cells, and then I will link Darius and let him know that we have

them in custody, and he can get Keska back here." \_ He sends me, and I close the link, I then open one to Frank. \_ "I Have

to go to the Party, so you will be in charge down here, Kirk and Rodney have made their move." \_ I sent to him. \_ "I also

just got a link from Cash that they told Chris he was needed for a special assignment." \_ He sent to me. " \_ "He went!

Right?" "Yes, he went, I told Cash to shadow them but stay out of sight and I would let him know what was up, but to be

his back up if things got rough." "Good. Alpha said he would link Darius and have him bring Keska in." "She isn't going

to just follow him blindly, I don't think she will trust him, who else is on this?"\_ He sent to me. \_"Clay, Brody, and Pete."

"She will trust Pete, have him be the one to approach her, or there may be trouble." "I will let the Alpha know. But I have

to go."\_ I close the link.

MITCHELL: I head up to the Pack house and enter the marquee, my wolf Hector just starts jumping around in my head. I

smell the most beautiful smell I have ever smelled in my life, it's a combination of roses and honeysuckle. I look around

and I find a the most alluring woman, she has sun kissed blond hair and the greenest eyes I have ever seen, she is wearing a beautiful green dress with a slit up the right leg to mid-thigh, just enough to be tantalizing but not garish or

trashy. MATE! MATE! MATE! My wolf howls in my head. I go straight to her. "Hello, I'm Mitchell." I say to her. "Hello I'm

Karen." She says. "I need you to please come with me." I say to her. "Where to?" I will explain everything but not here,

and not now, I have an assignment that I am in the middle of, and I need to finish it." I whisper in her ear. And the minute

I get close to her I can feel the tingles start. "Lead the way." She says. I take her hand, and I feel the electricity shoot

through my hand and into my body, and straight to my cock. (Not now Mitch, not now.) As we head to the Alpha.

Lost in the world of this story? Make sure you're on [Novel5s.com](http://Novel5s.com) to catch every twist and turn. The next chapter awaits,

exclusively on our site. Dive in now!

DRAKE: I see Mitchell approaching me with Beta Calen's granddaughter with him. "Mitchell." I nod to him. "Alpha, we

need to talk." He says to me. "Come." I take him to a room off the kitchen to talk. I notice that he brings Karen with him.

"Karen, good to see you again, I hope you are enjoying your visit with your grandfather?" "I am indeed Alpha, thank you,

for letting me come and for inviting me to the party." She replies. I close the door behind us. "What's up?" I ask Mitchell.

"First: Karen is my mate. Second: Frank thinks you should tell Pete to bring Keska in, she will trust him." He tells me.

"Congratulations." I tell them, "Is Pete on this mission?" I question him. "Yes, Darius handpicked his team, and Pete was

one of the people he picked, Keska knows him, and will trust him more than the others. So, if he is the one to approach

her, she will be less likely to be scared and run or something worse." He tells me. "Good point." I tell him. I link Darius.

"When the time comes, send Pete in to get Keska, she will know that she can trust him." "Copy that." I close the link.

"Darius knows to send Pete. I will let you enjoy your mate, but remember we still have work to do." I tell Mitchell. "With

your permission I would like to tell her Alpha, it's a bit much to have all this happening and just finding your mate, there

needs to be trust." He tells me. "I trust you know what not to tell." I say to him. He nods "Than I will leave you to it." And

I leave them the room.

MITCHEL: I turn to Karen, "There has been a series of events that have happened lately and after tonight we are hoping

that they will be over." I tell her. "They involved two of the Alpha's daughters' the eldest, Jessie and the middle one

Keska." I tell her. "There is too much to go into detail here and now, but I will tell you when this is all over." I tell her. "It all

sounds intriguing." She says. "I can't wait to get you alone, but for right now I just want to kiss the breath out of you." I

say to her. "What's stopping you?" and with that I pull her to me and smash my lips to hers, I taste the sweetness of her

lips, and I am addicted. I run my tongue across her bottom lip, and she opens her mouth to me. I slip my tongue into her

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 73**

[ 1,111 words ]

FRANK: I open a link to Cash. \_ "They have taken Keska and are holding her in the cabin, just keep watch, if Kirk and

Rodney get out of hand and start trouble step in to help Chris out." "Copy that." \_ I close the link. The waiting, is the

hardest part of all of this.

KESKA: I come to, and I look around I am in a cabin, there is a light on but it's dim. My head is pounding. I try to sit up,

but I can't. My hands are cuffed to the bed post above my head. I hear some movement to the left of me, I turn my head

and see a girl sitting in a chair. "Who are you?" I asked her and my voice sounds like I have a mouth full of gravel and my

throat is so dry. "I'm Tara." She says, "Where am I?" I ask her. "In the hunting shack at the North boarder." She tells me.

"Is there water? Can I get a drink?" I ask "Sure." She comes over and holds a bottle of water to my lips and helps to hold

my head up so I can drink. I take a few swallows of water and ask, "How did I get here?" "Kirk carried you and Rodney

came along for the trip." "Is there anyone else here with you?" I ask her. "Chris." She tells me "Are you part of my sisters

plan, or my father's?" I ask her. "Your father's." "What about Chris?" "I believe your father's." "Ok, do either one of you

have the key to the cuffs?" I asked. "I don't, I don't think they left them with us." She says. (Great just great!) I think to myself. "Is Chris here?" "Yeah, he's somewhere outside." "Well get him in here and let's ask him." I say, She takes out her

phone and texted someone, hopefully Chris. A minute later her phone dings. "Sorry out of luck, they didn't leave the

key." She tells me. I open a link. \_"Is there anyone close to the old hunting cabin at the north boarder?"\_ I put it out to

anyone that could hear me. \_"Keska, it's Pete, how are you?" "I'm ok considering the circumstances, but I do need to use

the bathroom, Kirk nor Rodney left the keys to the cuffs, I can get out of them but if I did that, to many people would be

exposed to too many secrets." "I understand, let them know that I am coming in, I don't want any trouble with them,

they are helping your father." "Thanks Pete, just please hurry."\_ I cut the link. "A guard is going to come and get me out

of these cuffs," I say.

KESKA: "So don't try to take him, he is one of the Delta elites, and he doesn't want to hurt anyone, helping to catch

Jessie." I tell her. She takes her phone out and sends a message, presumably to Chris. The door opens and 3 people walk

in, the only one I know is Pete. "Hey." "Hey yourself." "Please get these things off of me." Pete comes over to me, puts on

a pair of gloves and uncuffs me. "Thank you, but I really need to use the bathroom, when I come back, we can do

introductions." I head to the bathroom, I do my business, wash my hands, and come back out to where everyone is

sitting. "I am Keska, for those who don't know me." I say to the group at large. I look at a guy that looks to be about



Keska has her wolf." I whisper to him. "Don't react." I say. "There were a series of unfortunate events that brought it

about." I say. "She was rejected by her paternal grandmother, then Jessie rejected her, and she accepted it. Then she was

stabbed." "Calm down Trevor. Breath, we can't draw attention to us." I say soothingly to him. "The people responsible for

stabbing her are dead. But the person that master minded it all is still at large. I believe that they are working on it as we

sit here." "So, you must stay calm." "How do you know that they are working on it?" he whispers to me. I nod my head in

the direction of our lead warrior. "He is why I believe that they are working on it. He is the head warrior; he hates these

events and only shows at

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 74**

[ 1,028 words ]

the Alpha's instance." I tell them. "Plus watch his demeanor, he is watching for or looking for someone specific." "Do you

remember your lessons in inhouse surveillance?" I asked them. They both nod. "Good, so pay attention and watch him,

he will be the one to do the arrest." "There are other issues as well, but I will leave them for the girls to tell you, but don't

push, let them tell you on their time." I say to them. Again, they both nod.

MITCHELL: I finally catch sight of Kirk and Rodney; I watch as they nonchalantly start to make their rounds around the marquee. I watch as they pass Jessie's table and see Rodney pass something off to Dedi. I link the Alpha. \_ "I have them

both in sight, they just passed the keys back to Dedi, we will need to have a couple more guys here to help take them in.”

I send to him. “Have James and Wyatt give you a hand, they need to get the experience.”\_ He sends back to me.

\_“Copy.”\_ I link James and Wyatt. \_“Pay attention, you two, you’re up, we are going to take Kirk and Rodney to the cells,

then we are coming back for Dedi and Marla. Got it?” “Got it.”\_ I close the link and follow Kirk, and nod to the boys and

they go for Rodney. We follow them outside of the marquee and then arrest them. We take them to the cells and then we

go back into the party, and I see that Wyatt is already working on Dedi, and James is working on Marla. I just watch and

wait to see if they need a hand. They both get the girls out of the marquee and arrest them and take them to the cells.

The girls are crying like babies. I link the Alpha. \_“Done, the only one left is Jessie.” I tell him. “Good, leave Jessie to me,

let’s get Keska back here before her mate decides to take all our heads.”\_ He sends to me. \_“What? What do you mean mate, she is too young.” “She is but he isn’t, he is the youngest Lycan prince.” “Oh shit.” “Yeah! Oh shit.”\_ I close the link

with the Alpha and open one to Darius. \_“Bring her home. And make sure she is ok, otherwise the youngest prince might

have something to say.” “Oh Shit!” “Yeah.”\_ I close the link and go find my mate.

DARIUS: I open a link to Pete. \_“Bring her home, but be careful with her, we don’t want an issue with the youngest crown

prince.” “What are you on about?” “I have no clue, Mitch just said that he might have an issue if she is hurt.” “Yeah ok.”\_ I

close the link.

PETE: I am shaking my head as I link Clay. \_“Come on in, Clay, Tara is here, and the coast is clear, we need to get them all

back home.”\_ I turn back to the group. “Time to head back.” I say to them. “What’s the head shake for?” Keska asked me.



that one of the Alpha Heirs is my mate. The way he keeps watching me, it's exciting, thrilling almost, to see that he is

already being possessive of me. He's quite handsome, with hair the color of dark chocolate and brown eyes that go from

a soft brown, to almost black when he gets angry. His features are still a little boyish, but you can see the firm angular

structure of the man he will be. Yum. It will be interesting to watch to see who might be mated to whom, as the full moon

is tonight, maybe I won't wait, if he knows I am his I will let him take me tonight, under the full moon. That would be

amazing.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 75**

[ 1,160 words ]

JAMES: I watch as Jessie mingles with everyone, acting like she is the hostess of this gathering instead of mom and dad. I

can't help but just shake my head. I notice that Janica has been paying a bit more attention to me, or at least in my

direction this trip. I won't lie, it would be a pleasure to be mated to her. She is warm kind and sexy all rolled up in one

nice package. But I need to keep focused and my mind on task, because when Keska makes her entrance again Jessie will

probably lose her shit and we don't want her to be rejected, but she also needs to be punished for everything she has

pulled. I know I am one to talk, I wasn't any better to her, heck none of us were, but I have come around, I know better

now, I have to be better, do better so I can be a good Alpha for the pack. I know that I still have to finish up my time with Mr. Richards, and then it's off to Alpha training, I look forward to all of it as long as I know my mate will be here waiting

for me, heck if it is Janica, I just might make the request that she join me in doing the Alpha training, I know she would

love to do it.

WYATT: I am looking around, watching everyone, Jessie acting like a queen bee, I just shake my head at her. I see my

sister, she is scurrying in and out of the marquee, looking frantic. I frown, and link James. \_“I wonder what's got into my

sister. She looks frantic.” “Maybe because Keska isn't back yet, and the prince and his friend are staring hard at her. She

may be feeling a bit of the pressure, remember she and Keska are their mates, after all.” “I get that, but it's not like her to

be flustered.” “She might be feeling the mate bond, even though she is young.”\_

WYATT: \_“I'm not buying it; she never gets flustered. Not even when I've been being an ass to her. I'm going to go talk to

her.”\_ I close the link and go to my sister. I catch her as she comes into the marquee. “What's going on with you?” I ask

her. “What do you mean?” She asked me back. “I know something is bothering you, so what is it?” I ask her again. “I have

no idea what it is you are on about, but I have work to do.” She says and side steps me. I step back in front of her. “Kenz, I

know when something is bothering you, and something is definitely bothering you.” I say to her. “Oh, so now you want

to play the big brother. Save it, for Demi, Wyatt, you have proven more times than not that you could care less about me.” “Is there a problem here?” I hear a bit of a deeper voice coming from behind me. “No, nothing I can't handle, just

my big brother being a pain in the ass as usual.” She says. “I am not a pain in the ass little sister.” I say “Maybe not to



“We’re here.” I close the link. I turn to Pete. “Thank you. I am going to go to my room and take a shower and change.” I

tell him. “So let the important players know I am back, but I just need to get cleaned up.” I tell him and turn to go into

the house and up to my room.

PETE: I link Mitchell, and the alpha. \_“We got her back, she wanted to go take a shower and change, but she is back and

unharmd with the exception of having to had to go through it in the first place.”\_ I tell them and I head down to the

barracks to get cleaned up myself.

LIAM: I really don’t want to be around people right now, My sister is missing, and they are all parting and acting like it’s

no big deal, I am really starting to hate Jessie, I know she is behind Kes’s disappearance, the only people that seem to

care is Nana, Mackie, and for whatever reason the youngest prince and his friend. So much for Lissa’s newfound

awareness, she is right back under Jessie’s influence. So, while everybody is out parting I am beating up the billiard balls

in the game room until someone decides to tell me what the hell is going on with my sister. I know that after this incident

is over I am going to insist that she blood oath’s me to her, I am not going to

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 76**

[ 1,446 words ]

KESKA: I come downstairs after my shower and changing, I hear some pretty hard crashes of the pool balls coming from

the game room, so I head in that direction just to make sure that whatever is happening in there stays friendly. I find Lima

alone and taking his anger out on the balls. "Father will skin you if those balls brake." I say to him. He stops in mid shot,

turns to look at me, then drops the stick and runs straight for me. "Don't you ever disappear on me again!" He wraps his

arms around me and buries his face in my neck. "Hey, it's ok Liam, I am not hurt." I tell him as I wrap my arms around

him and rock him gently. "I also am not waiting until I am 18, when this stupid ball is over, I want you to blood oath me." He says with anger in his voice. "Liam we talked about that. There is really no way to undo that." "I don't care, you were

gone and none of them cared not one of them." He said to me. "Hey, Sshh, they cared, they had people in place watching, the worst thing that happened this time was that they put silver cuffs on me." I tell him in a soothing voice, I

whisper to him, "Silver doesn't bother me much, I think it has to do with Corla being an elemental. But we will keep that

secret to ourselves ok?" I ask him. He nods his head. "Ok, I have to get back to work now, are you going to be ok? And

not beat the crap out of the pool balls?" "I want to come with you." "I guess, Sarah can always use another pair of

hands." I say to him, and he nods. And we head to the kitchen. When I step in Mackie rushes to hug me, she ingulfs me in

a bear hug. "I was so worried, you didn't come back, and the prince was asking for us to join them for dinner, I didn't

know what to do." She rushed her words out at me. "Hey sshh I am ok." I tell her, as I hug her back. "We have work to

do." I say to her. "How on earth can you think of work after everything?" she says to me. "Because if I don't focus on that

I will break and I will not let Jessie win." I say to her. She nods. She heads through the door with a dish in hand and phone

in her pocket wearing the biggest smile I have ever seen on her face. I look to Liam, and he too is picking up a dish and

waiting on me. I walk over to Sarah to let her know that I am back and working. I then go and pick up the next dish in line

and head towards the door.

WYATT: There is a subtle shift in the energy, I felt it as my sister walked through the door of the marquee, and I also feel it

in the prince and the gamma sitting with us as they see the smile on her face. Keska must be back. I watch as Kenz put

the dish down and turns to look around, she spots Jessie, moves to a different location, and takes out her phone. I link

James. \\_“something is about to happen, Kenz is smiling, and she has her phone out, pay attention.”\\_

DRAKE: I got the link that Keska was back and that she was going to change. I also got a link from the guards that I had

on the cells, they overheard the girls talking, saying that they weren't going to take the fall for Jessie, that if they were

going down so was Jessie. That was enough for me. I headed into the marquee just intime to see Keska walk through the

other door carrying a hot plate to replace an empty one on the buffet right behind Liam. Jessie saw her and I thought

she was going to tackle her right then and there. I noticed Mackenzie standing in a position to catch the expression on

Jessies face when Keska walked in. I almost laughed but I had to get to Jessie before she started anything in here where

her possible mate might see, and then possibly reject her. Nobody wanted that to happen at least not yet anyway, if she

pulled shit after they were mated then it was on her. I moved in to stand in front of her. \\_“You will come with me to my

office, and you will not cause a scene, if you do cause a scene there is a good chance that everything that you have done

will come out and you could end up being rejected, do you want that?”\\_ I linked her. She just looked up at me and

blinked her eyes as if she had no clue what I was talking about, but she did come with me quietly.

JAMES: I watched as the whole thing with dad and Jessie played out, Liam looked as if he were going to bust out

laughing at any minute, at Jessie's expression, and the picture Mackie took, I linked her, \\_ "I want to see that picture." \\_

She just looked in my direction and then looked back at her phone, then my phone pinged, I took it out, she had sent it

to me. I opened it and then showed it to Wyatt and to the prince and his friend. We had been talking and I told them

that I knew who they were to my sister, and I also assured them that I would keep it to myself as would Wyatt. "I think I

need to go with them." I nodded in the direction of my twin and my dad. "Sometimes I can keep her from causing

havoc." I tell them. I follow my father and my sister out of the marquee and up to his office.

DRAKE: I noticed James get up and follow us, good he is starting to learn. We get to my office, and I motion to a chair in

front of my desk for her to sit in. "Why am I here? I didn't do anything." "Wrong. You did a lot and because of it you will

spend the rest of the weeknights in the cells with the rest of your friends, you will clean them, and you will sleep in them.

You will be let out for the activities that have been planned for the week, you will be allowed to shift on Wednesday, and if

your mate is here, you will accept him, but you will tell him that you are helping with an investigation and that you can't

spend nights with him but you will leave with him at the end of the week. Do I make myself clear to you?" "What did I do

daddy?" She whined at me. I took my phone out and showed her the text screenshot that I got from Janica. Then I let her

listen to the recording that Alpha Lucas sent as well. “So, are you still going to say you did nothing?” I asked her. “But the

cells? I can’t! Daddy, I am an alpha born how could you?” “Oh, so now you don’t think it’s funny when you have to spend

a week in the cells. You thought it was hilarious when you found out that your sister had to do it, because you didn’t take

responsibility for the things that you did, you thought that you had a built-in scape goat and things weren’t going to

catch up with you?” “What kind of Luna would that make you?” “What kind of person period does that make you?” “One

that I would not trust, and right now I am trying to make sure you learn a lesson before you end up getting rejected by

your mate if he or she is here right now.” “Because if any of this gets out to everyone that is here, there is that possibility

and truly nobody wants that.” I say to her. I watch as she hangs her head, she knows that she has been caught. “What will

happen to Dedi and Marla?” she asked “They will be sharing in your punishment, and spending the nights in the cells, if

their mates are here then they will leave with them at the end of the week, but if they go unmated they will be put on

probation and watched if they can stay out of trouble then I will co

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 77**

[ 1,225 words ]

LIAM: I continue to help Kes and Mackie with the food helping carry dishes and taking empty ones back to the kitchen.

So, I noticed when the prince approached Kes. I just made myself scarce, I didn't want to interfere with them, he has been watching her ever since she got back.

TREVER: I watch as the Alpha comes into the marquee and goes straight to his daughter and then they leave together,

and James shows us the picture that Dutch's mate took, she looked completely stunned, almost as if she were seeing a

ghost or something. But after what Lilly told us I put some of the pieces together, Jessie was not nice to her sister, and my mate had to pay the price for it. I am not pleased in the least but as long as Jessie gets punished I guess I will live with

what happened, it was in the past and there is nothing that can be done about it now. I will make them understand that I

will defiantly be keeping tabs on this pack though. Two more hours till midnight, now I am starting to wish I had gone for

that run earlier. I turn and see that Keska just finished with another empty serving dish, so I get up and go to her. "Hello

Keska." She starts a little. "Hello, you have me at a disadvantage, I do not know your name." she says to me. I smile at her

"My name is Trever Kingsten." She holds her hand out to me. "Keska Sutter middle child alpha born Blue Crescent Pack."

She gives the full formal introduction "Pleased to make your acquaintance." I shake her hand, and I feel the jolt of

electricity shoot right through me. "Have you actually eaten anything this evening?" I asked her. "Not really." "Then come

sit, I will get you some food, you do need to eat, and please link your friend to join us." I tell her. I watch as her eyes glaze

over and then her friend comes into the marquee as well. I lead them both over to the table where we are sitting with

Mickinzie's brother. "What would you like? I will get it for you." I tell her. With the food that she listed to me I go and

make up a plate, and bring it back to her. I noticed that Dutch has done the same for Mackinzie.

ADRIAN: I notice Keska sitting with one of the princes, her best friend Mackie, Wyatt, and someone I don't know. I make my way over to their table. "Hey Sweets." I say to her. "Adrian!" she jumps up and hugs me. "Is everything ok?" I ask her.

She starts to sign to me. (Jessie had me kidnaped and held in an old hunting cabin up by the north boarder, but father

had people watching, so I'm ok.) (I will get details from you later.) I sign back to her.

ADRIAN: "Are you going to introduce me to your new friends?" I ask her "Oh I am sorry, Adrian this is Prince Trever

Kingsten, his best friend gamma born Dutch Winters, from the Golden Sun Pack, and you know Mackie and Wyatt, Trever, Dutch this is my cousin Alpha Adrian Sutter of Moon Rise Pack." I put my hand out to shake both their hands, as she

made the introduction. "Did Rex find his mate?" she asked me. "As a matter of fact, he did, a warrior, with gamma in her

background, from one of the packs up north." I tell her. "I am so happy for him. I hope all my friends find their mates."

She says. I nod at her. "I am going to go see to Kina, the pup has been a bit restless this trip, so she is laying down." I tell

her. "I can send Nana to her; she might have something that might help settle the pup." She says. "Thank you, I will let

you know." I say as I kiss her head, shake hands with the males and head out to go to my mate.

TREVER: I was going to rip the guy's head off, until she did the introductions, I guess we will be cousins in the future. "I

didn't know you signed." I say to her. "Humm, do you sign?" she asked me (I know some.) I signed to her. "Did you catch

what I said to him?" she asked me. (Not everything.) I sign to her. "We will have fun. Mackie and I are about the only ones

in this pack that sign, Liam my little brother wants to learn too." She says. "Ok, not polite." Wyatt says. "Not my fault you

didn't learn, or want to learn." Keska says to him. "Has James picked a Beta yet?" she asked Wyatt "Not that I know of

why?" "Because you guys are going to lose Star, I believe her mates just claimed her." She said nodding in the direction of

a pair of identical twin males and a pretty female in between them. "Who are they?" I asked her. I didn't want to get

jealous over nothing, but she seems to know many of the males here. They are the twin alphas of Cold Moon Pack, Blake

and Blane, and Star is father's beta's only child. So, James will have to find a beta." She says. I nod. "Will you do the run

at midnight?" she asked me. "I might have to." I say. "My beast is a little on edge, so to sooth him I will let him run for a

bit." I tell her. She nods, in understanding.

WYATT: I am watching as different people are finding their mates all around me, I hope that mine is here and that they

are older whoever they may be, as I won't actually be 18 until next month, but if they are older they will know, and I won't care I won't wait until I'm 18 I will except them and take them at their word. Just as that thought crossed my mind

a beautiful woman comes over to me, she is about 5'7" and has an athletic body, I can tell that she works out a lot. She

has sandy brown hair and light brown eyes that have a hint of amber to them. "Hello." She says to me. "I'm Lexi, Delta

born from the Wolf Lake Pack, I'm 20. I know you're not 18 yet, so when is your birthday?" she asked me. "Next month." I

tell her. "Good then I won't have long to wait. I am your mate." She says to me. After hearing those words my mouth

starts to water. "Are you going to introduce me to your friends?" she asked. I just got lost in the sound of her voice I

couldn't think straight. "For give my idiot brother, his name is Wyatt, I'm his sister Mackenzie, This is Keska, she is the

alpha's middle daughter, Prince Trever, and his friend Dutch. They are from the Golden Sun Pack." I hear my sister do the

introductions. I couldn't take my eyes off of her. "Wow, royalty, how did that happen?" she asked seeming intrigued, and I wanted to rip the Prince to shreds, because he had her attention. "Our family has ties." Trever says.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## I watched as we were driving away to go park 78

[ 1,125 words ]

WYATT: I watch as she shakes hands with everyone, including my sister. "I look forward to getting to know you." She say

to Mackie. "We have a younger sister at home that you will get to meet later, her name is Demi." Mackie tells her. "Feel

like getting out of here? I whisper in her ear. She turns those soft brown eyes to me and I can't help it, I get a hard on just

looking at her. She smiles and nods. I get up and take her hand and lead her to the pack house, up to the Gamma suite, my parents never did use it, but I will. I open the door to the suite, and usher her in. I take her directly to the master

bedroom, it has a king size bed, done in neutral colors, I let her look around the room and I watch her. "Are you beta or

gamma?" she asked. Gamma, why do you ask?" "Well, that wasn't in the introductions and only ranked wolves stay in the

pack house." "This will be ours, so you will be able to decorate it however you want." I tell her. She just nods. I step up to

her and my hands go straight to her breast, I cup them through the fabric of her dress, they fit nicely in the palm of my

hand, I rub my thumb over her nip\*\*Is and she lets out a soft moan. That makes my c\*\*k even harder. My hands find the

zipper of her dress and I unzip it and watch as it falls to the floor. She is only wearing black lace panties under it. "I want

to taste you." I look into her eyes and wait for permission. She just nods at me. I take one of her nip\*\*ls into my mouth,

rolling my tongue over the sensitive tip, and suck hard, my other hand plays with her other nip\*\*l to get it ready for my

mouth, she arches her back to give me better access to her. I switch nip\*\*ls and pick her up and move to the bed, where I

lay her down, and release her with a pop, she whimpers at the loss of contact. "Don't worry love, I will fulfill every fantasy

you have, or could hope to have." I move down her body and with my teeth I catch the edge of her panties and start to

pull downward, with every breath I breathe I take in her sent, and breathe out blowing across her skin. She raises her hips

for me as I remove her panties, take her shoes off, and kiss my way back up to her core, she smells amazing. I lick her

from slit to cl\*t and she is already wet. "Are you a virgin" I ask her. "Yes" she says breathlessly "I will try to be gentle; you

are my first as well love." I say to her. "I don't want you to be gentle." She pants out. And I almost lose it. I suck her cl\*t

hard in my mouth flicking it with my tongue, she let out a breathy moan and fists my hair and pulls me closer, I sip a

finger in her opening still pulling hard on her cl\*t, she arches her back "more" she pants out. I move my finger in and out

of her and she raises her hips to meet my thrust, I hold her hips down with my other arm to keep her from not moving I

want her to c\*m before I give her my d\*\*k. I keep flicking her cl\*t with the tip of my tongue and then sucking hard on it,

she is squirming and trying to meet the thrust of my fingers going in and out of her. "Oh! goddess Wyatt I am c\*mming!"

She screams. "Yes baby c\*m for me, and I will give you what you want." I tell her. As I flick her cl\*t with my tongue again,

and she c\*ms in my mouth, and I suck her almost dry as I still want her wet enough to take me. We have just gotten

started. I come up to kiss her, to let her taste herself on my lips. "Mmm." She smiles at me. "Indeed." I raise my eyebrow

at her, and slide the head of my d\*\*k into her entrance and push in slowly so she can feel me start to fill her as I push in.

when I hit her hymen I feel her stiffen slightly "you have to relax love, I will make it quick and let you get used to me

before I continue." I tell her. "I know." She whispers. I start to kiss her to distract her and when I feel her relax, I finish

pushing in and have her filled to the hilt with my d\*\*k. I just stay still loving how she feels wrapped around my c\*\*k, I

can't feel the tingles yet, but I know she can. "Tell me how the tingles feel with me buried deep in you." I say to her. "Oh!

Goddess Wyatt, I want more!" She says to me. I just roll my hips on her and watch her face, as I do, her eyes have

darkened with lust. I roll my hips again I want to feel every part of her, and I want her to feel me in every part of her.

"Wyatt please." She begs me. "Please what? Love." I ask her. "Please f\*\*k me, fu\*\*k me hard!" she whimpers. So, I oblige

her. I pull halfway of out of her to push back in, then I pull out so just the tip is still in and slam back into her and we both

get into the rhythm, she matches me thrust for thrust, I can feel the soft spot deep inside of her and I continue to push in

to hit it with every thrust. I can feel the tightening in my lower abdomen, and I can feel her walls contracting around my

c\*\*k as we both release our orgasms, I shoot ribbons of c\*m deep into her hot p\*\*sy, as she soaks my c\*\*k with her juices.

I kiss her deeply I wrap my arms around her and roll her on top of me, keeping us connected I want to keep my d\*\*k in

her as long as I can. To feel her wrapped around me is amazing. A month to wait before I will feel the tingles, I bet it will

be mined blowing. Until then I will enjoy burring my c\*\*k in her every chance I get. I throw the comforter over us as we

both drift off to sleep with me sill deep inside her.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 79**

[ 1,578 words ]

KESKA: "I have to help clean up and you will want to get ready for the run." I say to Trevor. "I can help you with cleanup.

For whatever reason, my beast has settled so I may not have to run after all." He tells me. I know I am blushing. Both

Mackie and I start with whatever empty dishes there are, we get them into the kitchen rinsed and, in the dishwasher, then we start to bring in what is left over and find containers for them to store in the refrigerator. While the whole time Trevor

and Dutch are helping us and flirting. It feels strange to have someone flirt with me. No one ever has before. No, not

even Seth, he was friendly, until he wasn't. I just feel out of my league with him. He's a freaking prince for crying out

loud, and he is flirting with me!

TREVER: I love how she blushes when I flirt with her. I know she is too young, but I want all of her firsts to be with me. I

am going to kiss her before the night is over, I want to know if she tastes as good as she smells, because her chocolate

coffee mint smell is intoxicating.

DRAKE: I step into the marquee. "Can I have your attention please." I use my Alpha tone to get everyone's attention.

Once it quiets down, "I know that many of you have found your mates, that is fantastic, we have organized a midnight

run to honor the goddess, please feel free to join in the run. There are changing stations set up, and bags for you at the

edge of the forest. I have my Beta Gregg leading the run for you. Please enjoy and have fun."

JAMES: Before I could get back to the table, Janica come up to me. "I know we are mates, and I know that you will be 18

on Wednesday, but do you want to wait, or do you want to go have some fun?" She whispers in my ear. That's all it takes,

and my c\*\*k is tenting my pants. I step into her and take her hand and place it over the bulge she just created. "Does this

answer your question." I say, and watch her smile at me. I lead her into the pack house and over to one of the elevators, we step inside, and I hit 5. As soon as the doors close, I turn her me, I take her lips in a deep kiss as I let my hands roam

her body, I find the zipper of her dress and bring it down slowly as I let my fingers caress her bare skin as it come down. I

don't bring it all the way down though, just enough to let the top fall. She isn't wearing a bra, so her breast are bare to me. I blow across her nip\*\*es and watch as they pebble under my breath. I take one in my mouth, running my tongue

over the sensitive tip I feel it harden even more in my mouth, I suck it hard, I let my other hand pinch and play with her

other breast, she whimpers and threads her fingers through my hair holding my head and mouth in place as she tips her

head back enjoying my mouth on her body. I take her other breast in my mouth again dragging my tongue across the

sensitive tip feeling it harden in my mouth drawing another moan from her lips "James" She pants breathlessly. The

doors open I pick her up in my arms not taking my mouth from her breast I walk to my room. I open my door, once

inside I let her nip\*\*I go with a pop. I set her down, close and lock my door. "Did you know when we were at your pack?"

I asked her. "I did but we weren't close enough to the full moon or your birthday." She tells me. "Well not there is no

escaping it, I am going to f\*ck you until you can't see straight." I tell her, and I see her shiver. "I want you to." She

whispers to me. I reach out to her and finish stripping her out of her party dress, I take her heels off her, I reach up and

hook her panties with my thumbs and pull them down and let her step out of them, I toss them on her dress. I make her

spread her legs as I lick my way back up her legs to her core, she is dripping on me, already wet, I lap at her juices as she

stars to pant, with her standing I bury my face in her dripping p\*\*sy and go to town, sucking on her cl\*t making her

whimper and call my name. It sounds sweet on her lips. I push my tongue into her dripping core to taste more of her, she

gasps. Threading her fingers through my hair trying to get closer to the pleasure I am giving her. I use my thumb and

fore finger to pinch and roll her cl\*t between them making her pant. "Goddess James! I need more!" "I will give you all

you want and more, c\*m for me Janica, let me taste you." I say to her, I start to alternate my fingers and my tongue on

her cl\*t pushing my finger inside of her, I feel the walls of her p\*\*sy start to contract, I add another finger to her p\*\*sy and

suck hard on her cl\*t, she throws her head back and screams my name, I lap up all her juices as I hold her up. I stand up

wrapping my arms around her taking her lips in a deep kiss, letting her taste herself on me. "That was only round one my

dear I am nowhere near done with you." I tell her as I pick her up and carry her to my bed, I lay her down and cover her

with my body “I want my d\*\*k in you so bad right now I can hardly stand it.” I tell her. “I want your c\*\*k to fill me up.” “I

don’t want to hurt you.” “You won’t, I want this as much as you do.” I line the head of my d\*\*k up with her slit and ease

myself in, playing with her cl\*t as I do, I slide all the way in until my balls are touching her. “you’re not a virgin?” “I am,

but I didn’t want anything to detract from this, so I used a dildo, and I am glad that I did, I love the feel of you so deep

inside of me and no pain to mar this moment.” She says to me. I love the fact that I don’t have to go slow. I roll my hips

over her pushing in as far as I can, I feel her walls clenching my d\*\*k, I pull out until just the head of my d\*\*k is still in her

and push my way back into her, and roll my hips, again hitting that soft spot that makes her walls clench, I love the

feeling of it on my c\*\*k it’s making me harder if that is even possible. “Don’t tease James, I need you.” I pick up the pace

tweaking her cl\*t ever so often, she meets me thrust for thrust until I am slamming into her skin slapping on skin. “Oh

Yes! Goddess James yes! I’m c\*mming.” “C\*m for me Janica cover my c\*\*k with your c\*m.” I also feel the tightening in my

lower abdomen, and we orgasm together, I release ribbons of my c\*m deep inside her p\*\*sy as her walls milk me dry. I

hold her as we both come down from our high, I start to kiss and play with her nip\*\*es and suck them till they get hard

again pulling a moan from her lips. She threads her fingers through my hair and holds me in place, I don’t mind, I play

with her nip\*\*le in my mouth sucking and rubbing my tongue across the sensitive tip, letting it go with a pop only to take

the other one in my mouth, sucking hard on it, and rubbing the tip of my tongue across the sensitive tip of it, pulling

another moan from her witch goes straight to my c\*\*k. "I want to tase you James." She says breathlessly. I release her

with a pop. She slides down my body and takes my d\*ck in her hands and starts to lick it like a sucker, circling the tip of

her tongue across the tip of it. "Yes! Janica baby just like that!" I moan out to her. She takes me into her mouth, I don't

push I just let her take her time and enjoy what she is doing, I love the feel of her mouth on me. She sucks me just like

she would a sucker wrapping her tongue around my c\*\*k. she picks up her speed and I can feel the tightening start in my

abdomen "I'm c\*mming." She doesn't stop she plays with my balls and squeezes them, rubs them, and I c\*m shooting in

her mouth and she swallows every last drop. She crawls up my body and kisses me, I taste myself on her lips and it

intoxicates me.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 80**

[ 1,221 words ]

JAMES: I pull her up onto all fours and I enter her from behind I can't hold back I slam into her. I look down and watch as

I move in and out of her, I turn us so that we are parallel to the full-length mirror on the walk-in closet, "Turn your head, watch me f\*\*k you." I tell her. I push in and roll my hips hitting that spot that makes her walls clench, and I hold, then I

pull out and push in again rolling my hips to hit that spot, I hold again, then pull out, push in and roll and hold, I want her

to feel how her walls clench me, how her body is already mine. "James, I need more, please!" I pick up the pace and I

start to slam into her, skin slapping skin, I reach around and pinch her cl\*t, and we both come undone c\*\*ming at the

same time. We both collapse on my bed breathing hard. I turn us so that I am spooning her, but I don't pull out, I love

the feel of my d\*\*k in her.

\*\*\*\*\*

\*

KESKA: After father made his announcement, people started to file out of the marquee making it easier for Mackie and me to finish cleaning up. I am not sure if the guys were a help or a hindrance with the way they keep flirting and slowing

the process down, but we got it done, even wiped it clean and got it ready for breakfast tomorrow. I'm exhausted but I

am also pretty wound up after everything that happened. "I think I am going to take a swim; I need to relax after

everything that happened today." I say to them. "It's late Kes." Mackie states. "I know but I don't think I would be able to

sleep right now if I tried." I tell her. "I'm hoping the water will help sooth me." "Ok I will come too." She says. "We'll join

you in the pool the guys say. "Ok." Mackie and I head to the changing area to put on our bathing suits. I have a 2-piece

tank and boy shorts in green and Mackie has a one piece with cut outs at the sides, also in green. The pool is empty just

the way I like it. I can just float on my back and watch the stars. It's relaxing and calming, then both the guys join us. They

both dive in at the deep end of the pool, causing the waves to rock me even deeper into a state of calm. "Hey, beautiful

don't fall asleep." I hear Trever whisper in my ear. "Mmm, don't worry I won't drown." I say. "How do you know?" he

asked. "I have a secret, but I bet you might know, because you talked to Nana." I tell him. "You are right I know a little,

but how did you know I talked to Lilly? and I would like to know all of it.” “My best friend let me know.” \[Corla, do you want to show him?\] I asked her, and I hear her giggle in my head. As she makes the water raise him up out of the pool,

and then she brings him back down gently. “That is how I know I won’t drown.” I tell him. “Wow.” I just smile at him. The

next thing I know he puts his arms around me pulling me up to him, I feel the heat coming off his body, he is warm, it

feels nice. He lowers his head, is he going to kiss me? His arms tighten around me, his lips meet mine in a soft kiss, I close

my eyes, as he runs his tongue over my lower lip, and he sucks on it. My hands come up to rest on his shoulders, his

other hand holds my head in place as his lips move over mine, he nips my bottom lip, and I open my mouth. He pushes

his tongue in my mouth, and he sucks on my tongue. I am holding on to him, lost in the moment of his kiss, but I need

air, I tap his shoulder to let him know I need to breathe. He breaks the kiss. I just stare at him; I don’t know what to say. No one has ever kissed me before. I know I am blushing, and I turn away. “Don’t, don’t look away beautiful.” He says. I

look back at him, and he smiles. “I think it is time to go.” I say a bit breathlessly. “The pool worked it’s magic, I think I will

be able to sleep now.” I whisper. “I don’t think I will though.” He tells me. “I think I will need to hold you all night if I am

to get any sleep at all.” He says in a quiet tone, that sends shivers through me. I am hesitant. I have never slept with

anyone before, I mean not in the same bed, even when Mackie and I have sleepovers we each had our own twin bed to

sleep in. “Please don’t say no princess, I swear on the honor of my family, I won’t do anything but hold you, I promise.” He sounds so lost and yet hopeful at the same time; it pulls at my heartstrings. I just nod my head at him, and with that

simple gesture it’s as if he lights up the whole area with his smile, goddess he has a beautiful smile. We all get out of the

pool. I notice that Mackie is also leaving with Dutch, and he is wearing the same smile Trever is, so I link her. "I take it you

said yes to Dutch?" "Yeah, he almost begged for me to stay with him, and he pouted, I couldn't say no." "Yeah, I get it me

too." I smile and close the link. "Mackie and I will go change, and we will meet you at the stairs on the second floor." I tell

him. He just shakes his head no. "No?" "I will come with you, and Dutch will go with Mackie." He says. "Our beds aren't

going to fit you, and us." I tell him. "Then we will take you to our suite, but I am not leaving you." He says. I just shake my

head. "Come on then, we still have to change, but you will wait outside the room while we do." I tell him. He just nods.

And we head to my room to change.

LIAM: I am waiting outside my sister's door; I don't want to be by myself tonight. I am scared again; I can't lose her. I

hear them walking down the hallway, I get a surprise as they come around the corner, the prince and his friend are with

them. I don't care, they are probably just making sure the girls gets to Kes's room safely. "Liam is everything ok?" she

asked me. "No, I'm scared Kes." "What's got you scared buddy?" "Same as before, I can't lose you." I say with tears in my

eyes. She just reaches out and holds me. She rubs circles on my back and rocks me. I don't care that the others are there,

I just need my sister

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

**I watched as we were driving away to go park 81**

[ 1,528 words ]

KESKA: I link Mackie “\*He’s not going to let go, open my door.” “Ok, but what are we going to do about the guys?” “I

have an idea if they are open to it.” “Ok.”\* I close the link, and Mackie opens the door to my room. I nod for the guys to

enter. “Hey, we are going to go into my room, sweets.” I say to Liam. He loosens his grip just enough to walk with me.

Once in, I close the door. “How about a camp sleep over.” I say out loud. “Yes please.” Liam answers. “I’m up for it.” Mackie says. “Now you have us at a disadvantage, what is a camp sleep over?” Dutch asked. “It’s where we push the

beds over to one side and take the bedding and put it in the middle of the floor and all sleep together.” I tell them. “I

don’t care as long as I get to hold you.” Trever whispers in my ear. “I’m game.” Dutch answers smiling at Mackie. “Ok,

let’s get the beds moved.” I say. With the guys there things get done quicker than if it was us alone. “You three go

change and get ready for bed, when you get back, we will have everything else ready.” I tell them, and watch as they

leave, with Liam reluctant to go. “Hey Liam, right?” Trever asked. He nods his head. “Why don’t you show us where your

room is, then you can grab your things and come change with us.” I watch as his face lights up, and he nods at the

guys, and they head out. Mackie and I change quickly and then strip the beds, grab more pillows from the hall closet,

along with a few more blankets for cushion on the floor, and get the floor ready for bed.

DUTCH: I link Trever. “So, does she taste like she smells? And I didn’t think we would end up babysitting.” “Better. And we’re not, I get where he’s coming from, she has gone through a lot, and he is just afraid that something else is going to

happen and he won’t have her anymore. Think of it like one of us possibly losing one of our brothers, or a family

member, I am just glad that she has him, and Mackie, it seems as if the rest of the family doesn't care one way or the

other, well except for Lilly. What about you, dose she tastes as good as she smells?" "Better. And well when you put it like

that, yeah, I guess. I did notice the same thing though, even with Mackie. It's sad." He just nods his head. As we follow

Liam to his room. He opens the door, and we go in, I notice that he has a full-size bed in here, where Keska had two

twins, it doesn't make sense. I see that Trever notices it too.

TREVER: "Nice room." "Mom and Dad let us pick our own stuff to decorate our rooms with." "Did Keska choose to have

two twin beds?" I asked him "I think she did, because she has Mackie sleep over some times, so they each have their own

bed to sleep in." I just nod that I understood. "Go get your PJs." I tell him. "Thanks, and I'm sorry, I didn't mean to mess

up your guys' night, but I just need to be with her right now." He said with tears in his eyes. I just go give him a hug. "I

know, I get it, even though I have two older brothers, and they can be a pain in the ass at times I love them and would

hate to see anything bad happen to them." I tell him. "But that's just it, Keska isn't a pain, Jessie's the pain, Keska took

me with her when she knew that she could get in trouble for it, because I sometimes have a big mouth." He says as he is

getting his PJs. Then we head over to our suite, Dutch and I change into a pair of sweats, and grab clothes for the next

day, and Liam changes into his PJs. We head back to Keska's room. We let Liam lead the way. We get back, Liam knocks

and walks in. Dutch and I wait to be invited back in.

KESKA: The guys were sweet; they waited to be invited in. "Come on in, unless you plan on sleeping in the hall." I say with

a chuckle. They enter my room and see that it is set up and ready for bed, just like we said it would be. "Nice." Trever

says. I just smile. Once everyone was settled, I turned the light off and went to lie down next to Trever, with Liam facing

me. I should have figured he was going to need to be close tonight after his episode in the front hallway earlier. As

promised Trever just wrapped his arms around me and fell asleep, I felt warm, and safe. It was probably the first time I felt

safe since I was 7 years old. It was nice, I just snuggled in and fell asleep.

LEXI: I wake up to the most wonderful smell, I know it's my mate, he smells like freshly cut wood. It's still dark out. I'm a

little disoriented on where I am at the moment, and I need to use the bathroom, I feel his hard body under me, and I feel

a strange sensation and the tingles between my legs, and inside of me. Then I remember, and oh my goddess he is still in

me. How is that even possible? I feel him start to stir, and he is getting harder inside of me. Wow I never that I would feel

that happen. I know they say that guys will sometimes wake up with a hard on, but to actually feel it happen when he is

inside of you is a different

experience all together. I can feel my walls start to clench around him, and he hasn't even moved, I am hooked if he is

like this now what will he be like when he gets his wolf next month. I am sore after our earlier go round, and I really do

need to use the bathroom. "Wyatt, love." I speak softly to him and kiss his soft lips, "Humm?" "Baby I need to use the

bathroom, can you let me up?" His eyes open and he smiles at me. "I will carry you in, I don't want to lose contact with

you just yet." He says mischievously. He wraps his arms around me even tighter and gets up I wrap my legs around his

hips, and he walks us into the bathroom with me still impaled on his d\*\*k. Then he lifts me off, and puts me down in front

of the toilet and sets me down on it, he then spreads my legs wide and goes down on his knees in front of me and starts

to suck my cl\*t, hard, flicking it with his tongue and licking it until I feel the tightening in my lower abdomen. "Oh!

Goddess Wyatt! I am c\*mming." And just as I start to c\*m he releases me and tells me to release my p\*ss. I did as he said

and that was one of the most mind-blowing orgasms I've had, not that I've had many before last night, but still, wow. "I

love watching you orgasm." He says to me. "Now let's get you cleaned up, I know you are probably sore, I will run you a

bath to help ease some of the achiness." He says. And then he goes over to the tub and turns the water on and lets it run

a bit before he plugs the tub. I watch as he puts some Epsom salt in it. Then he comes back picks me up and walks over

and gently sets me down in the tub. "I am going to go change the bedding, then I will be back to get you, don't fall

asleep." He says. I lean back and let the warm water sooth my achiness. I turn the water off, so it doesn't overflow onto

the floor, and just relax. About 10 minutes later he comes back into the bathroom. He picks me up, and stands me up on

a plush rug. I take the time to look around at the bathroom, it's bigger than any I have seen or used before. It's done in a

light mint green, and medium stained hard wood, double vanity, the floor is tiled in a subway tile that has a darker green

swirl in it, it's comfortable, I wouldn't change anything in here. Wyatt wraps a thick plushy towel around me. "Are you

ready for another go round." He says with that mischievous grin. Wow he has an appetite, but he is ranked after all. I look

down and he is standing at attention, I couldn't help myself, I drop to my knees and take him in my mouth and suck hard

on the head of

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 82**

[ 1,228 words ]

LEXI: I love the taste of him, I caress his balls as I continue to suck, I run the tip of my tongue across the tip of his c\*\*k

tasting the pre c\*m. He moans "Oh! Goddess Lexi, yes just like that yes!" I continue to suck harder; he starts to push deep

into my mouth until he hits the back of my throat, I gag a bit but don't stop, I want him to c\*m in my mouth, I want to

taste all of him. He picks up his speed and I know he is close. "I'm c\*\*mming!" and he shoots ribbons of hot c\*m down

my throat I swallow every bit of what he gives me, and I want more. He picks me up and lines the head of his c\*\*k up with

my opening and slides me down on his stiff shaft. I can feel him deep inside and I can feel the tingles it makes my P\*\*sy

start to clench just by the tingles alone, goddess help me, I never thought that I would become addicted to anything, but

I am addicted to this feeling. I start to ride him back into the bedroom, watching his face the whole entire time. "That's it

baby ride me." He pants, as we get to the bed, and he eases down careful not to lose contact. He moves back on the bed

and starts to play with my cl\*t as I ride him nice and slow I want to build us to c\*m at the same time and I want to watch

him as I ride him to his release. I roll my hips on him as I can feel him inside me, he pinches and rolls my cl\*t between his

fingers, not painful but firm and keeps just enough pressure on it to get me there quicker. "Yes Lexi!" He moans I pick up

the speed a little. I feel my walls contract around him I feel so full, with him buried in me, he sits up slightly and plays

with my nip\*\*es, and I feel myself clench him even harder, I see his eyes darken with the lust he is feeling, and I love that

it's me that has him feeling like this. "Baby I need you to go faster." He says. I start to rise up and come down on him, my

walls gripping him all the way up and coming back down. "Oh, goddess Lexi what are you doing to me, don't stop." He

pants out. I can feel I am close, so I pick up the speed even more. "Yes! I am c\*mming" he cries out and we both release

at the same time. I just fall forward and rest on him as we both come down from our high. Again, he wraps his arms

around me, "Sleep now love." He whispers. I drift into the best sleep I've had in a long time, and he is still inside me.

\*\*\*\*\*

JANICA: I wake to the smell of fresh bread baking and coffee brewing. I know it's James, the smell makes my mouth water. I can still feel him buried in me, and I can't wait to meet his wolf on Wednesday, it's going to be crazy with both of

us being alphas, he will be insatiable. I don't mind I look forward to all the fun we will have in the bedroom. I am ready

for another go round. Just something about waking up with a semi hard d\*\*k buried in your p\*\*sy dose that to you. I

start to push my ass backwards into him, and roll my hips to get him to just that right spot, my walls are already

clenching around him. "Mmm, I take it that you're ready for another go round? Aren't you sore?" he asked me. "Mybe a

little but I want you, and it's all on you." I tell him. "Mmm." Is his only response. He moves slowly so as not to lose

contact, he pulls me with him and puts me on all fours again, I can feel him deep inside of me, he is getting harder I can

feel it as he gets to his full length, and he hits my g-spot again. "Oh! James yes!" I moan out to him. My walls clench

down hard on his c\*\*k buried deep in me, like my p\*\*sy doesn't want to lose its favorite toy. "I love how your p\*\*sy

clenches me." He says as he pulls out and slams into me, hitting my spot with every stroke he makes. "James! Yes! Yes!" I

cry out. He pushes into me hard and we both orgasm together. He puts his arms around me and pulls me up to him, so

my back is flush against his front. "Let's get you cleaned up love." He says. And he pulls out of me. Picks me up bridal

style and carries me to the bathroom, sets me down and goes to start the bath, letting the water run a bit first to let the

cold water clear the pipes before he plugs the tub. He adds Epsom salt to the water to ease my sore muscles. I use the

toilet, and he comes to pick me up again and carries me over to the tub and sets me down in the warm water then he

joins me in the tub. He washes my back and massages my shoulders and neck, then his hands start to move to the front,

he washes my chest, and his hands move down to my breast, he massages them, he tweaks my nip\*\*es and they get

hard. "Mmm. James." "Sshh, I just want to touch every inch of you." He whispers. I just relax back into him and let him

work his magic, as everywhere he touches the tingles follow.: His hand travels down across my abdomen, "I can't wait to

feel you round with our pups." He whispers in my ear. "I will love to bury my c\*\*k in you while you feed our pup, and then

feed me.” Again, he whispers in my ear, and it sends a shutter through my body. I feel my walls clench on nothing. “Don’t

tease me James.” I moan out to him. “Sshh, just relax feel the tingles.” He says, “Because when I get my wolf on Wednesday, we are going to be doing this all over again.” He says. I just breathe him in. His hands move lower and

covers my mound, he cups my outer lips, runs his hand up and down them, feeling every inch of them. All the while he

keeps playing with my nip\*\*es, keeping them hard. He slips two fingers in my slit and puts slight pressure and rubs circles

on my cl\*t with his thumb. Drawing another moan from me. I can’t help it I ride his fingers, chasing them as he thrust

them in and out of me, the warm water seems to help get me there quicker, as I start to pant “Oh! James.” “Yes, love, I am

here, c\*m for me.” He says softly in my ear. I can’t hold back, and I release my orgasm. He holds me as I come down.

“Let’s get you dried off and back to bed.” I just nod to him. I am tired now and just want to sleep.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 83**

[ 1,344 words ]

JESSIE: I hate that I am stuck in the cells, and that it’s because of Keska. and I have to clean them, well at least Marla and

Dedi are here with me, so I am not alone. I don’t get why though, it’s not like they ever actually cared about her, I mean

they always let us get away with blaming her, and it’s not like I was going to have her killed, just taken out of the way, so I

just don't get it. At least he said I would be able to leave with my mate if he is here. I suppose I better try to sleep; he did

say that I could be let out for the activities that have been planned. I just don't know when he expects me to get the cells

cleaned. Goddess, it stinks down here. I feel a push of a mind link I open to it. \*'Jessie, what did the alpha say would

happen to us?' Marla's voice came into my head. 'We meaning, all three of us have to spend the nights for the week in

the cells and clean them, we will be let out to join the activities, and if we find our mates then we will leave with them at

the end of the week. If you two don't get your mates then you will be put on probation and watched, if you stay out of

trouble, he will send you to every mating ball that comes up till you find your mates.'\* I tell her. \*'Thank the goddess. At

least we aren't going to die.'\* She sends back. \*'Why would you think that?' 'Because of Brent and Ronnie! Nobody

knows what happened to them, except that they are dead! Jessie!'\* She sends through the link. \*'Daddy wouldn't do

that.'\* I send back. \*'She is still his daughter, and even if you get away with treating her like dirt, doesn't mean he will let

others get away with it, or help you get away with it!'\* She sends back.

\*\*\*\*\*

BARRET: I have found my mate with the full moon last night. She is alpha apparent of Dark Moon Pack, Alisha Marsden.

She is 20 so not too big of a gap, I am 2 years older. I know my brothers also found their mates, Trent's is from Lilly's

home pack, Burning Ember, again the alpha apparent, Rachel Grey, and is a year older than Trent, and Trever has Keska, I

hope that he is behaving, considering she is underage. I think Marsh will be happy, considering his grandniece is going to

be a princess, and so is his alpha's first born. Speaking of Trever I haven't seen him since before the run last night.

\*"Trever, bro where are you?"\* I link him. \*"With my mate, trying to sleep!"\* He sends back. \*"TREVER! You know you

have to wait!"\* I practically yell. \*"Will you stop yelling, we had a camp sleep over, I am with Keska, her brother Liam,

Mackinze, and Dutch in her room. Do think I am going to be stupid enough to be doing anything with her, with her little

brother in the same room? So can you please just let me sleep?" "Sorry, I found my mate, and Trent found his last night

as well." "Good for you, I'm happy for you. Let me sleep!"\* I close the link, shaking my head. Then I feel a push from

Trent. \*"Do you know where Trever is? Because he is not in his room." "Yes I just got scolded for waking him up, he is

having a camp sleep over, whatever that is, with his mate, her little brother, Dutch and his mate." "They are underage,

remember." "Yes, but he isn't stupid, he won't be doing anything with her, with her little brother in the same room,

neither is Dutch for that matter." "Yeah I suppose. Marsh will be happy; his grandniece will be a princess." "Yeah I was just

thinking the same thing, but for now we need to keep it under wraps, until she is of age, : I don't want a target put on

her." "Yeah I get that, and I think that there is already some crap going down with her." "What are you talking about?"

"Were you not paying attention last night? After Trever spoke to her, she disappeared, then Lilly spoke to both Him and Dutch, and it was a long time before she showed again, I thought Trever was going to lose his shit." "No, I didn't notice, I

was preoccupied with finding my mate I guess, I kept smelling her but couldn't actually see where she was. Turns out she

was just outside of where we were sitting, so I could smell her but couldn't see her." "Figures." "Did he say anything,

about Keska being gone I mean.” “No but he looked like he was going to rip into some one if she didn’t come back.” “I’ll

ask him about it later. I don’t feel like getting my head bit off again.”\* He just laughs at me, and I close the link.

KESKA: It’s later than usual when I wake up. I look at the clock and it’s already 9:00. I haven’t slept this late since I was

stabbed. I link Sarah. “Oh gosh Sarah, I am so sorry, I had a camp sleep over with Liam, Mackie, the prince, and his friend Dutch. Do you still need me to come help?” “No, my dear, if one of the princes’ is with you just have fun for once. We

have the kitchen under control.” She sends back to me. I do need to use the bathroom though, so I wriggle to get out

from Trevor’s arms without trying to wake him, but it doesn’t work his arms tighten around me. “Hey.” I whisper to him.

“I just need to go use the bathroom, ok?” “Humm.” And he loosens his arms enough to let me up. I go into the

bathroom, do my business, wash my hands, and come back out. Walking back into my room I see that Liam is awake,

“Hey” I whisper to him. “Hey” “Are you feeling better?” “I am some, but I am still going to hold you to doing the thing.” He whispers back to me. “Liam, I told you, there is no going back from what we did.” “I know, but why can’t I?” “Because

they will feel you, they didn’t pay any attention to Mackie, because like me her family really could care less about what

happens to her. You on the other hand they would know.” “Well if they do then it would only be a good thing for you,

because then if anything happens again they would feel it through me.” He says. “I love you little brother, but I don’t

think even that would change them, and it would only get me in trouble with father.” I whisper to him. “What are the two

of you whispering about” I hear Trevor say. “Sorry, we didn’t mean to wake you.” I say softly to him. “Don’t worry about

it, my brother did that an hour ago.” He says. “I was just enjoying the quiet, waiting for the rest of you to wake up.” He

says. "So, are you going to tell me what you were whispering about?" "I will later. I promise." I tell him. He just nods. I

look over and see that both Mackie and Dutch are awake. "OK, now that everybody is up, time to put the room back." I

say to them. And we all pitch in to clean up my room and put it back to the way it is supposed to be. Again, with the guys

flirting for most of it. I just shake my head. The guys take turns using my shower, Liam goes back to his room and uses his

own and then Mackie and I take our turn in the shower, when we are done and dressed we all head down for breakfast.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 84**

[ 1,326 words ]

JAMES: I wake up in the morning entangled with Janica, and as much as I want to stay in bed with her, I do need to speak

with dad, I want, no I need to know what is going on with Keska, something is up with her, off, something. "Morning love."

"Morning." I kiss her. "As much as I would love to ravish you again, I need to get cleaned up and see if dad has a free minute, I need to know what he has planned for Jessie, and what is going on with Keska." "What do you mean, what's

going on with Keska?" "That's just it I'm not sure, but something feels off with her." "I want to come with you, if

something is wrong, as the future Luna I need to know to." "Speaking about that, I have a few things I need to tell you,

and discuss with you, but they will wait until I have my answers from dad about Keska." "That sounds a bit ominous,

James.” “No nothing like that, just stupid stuff I did that I have to make up for, and an idea I have.” “Ok, let’s get cleaned

up.” I check the time and it’s 8:00 so we should be able to catch dad before the events start. We both jump in the

shower together to same time. I can’t help but admire her body, she is strong and fit with just the right curves, full breast,

not overly large, but fill my hand nicely, narrow waist, just a bit more rounded at the hips, just beautiful. We get cleaned

up, get out and I give her a pair of my sweats and a tee shirt to put on so that she didn’t have to put her dress back on,

to walk back to her room, I went with her and waited for her to change. As she was changing I linked dad. “I need to

come talk to you, and I am bringing my mate with me.” “You haven’t shifted yet, how do you know, they are your mate?”

“She’s older, and she told me, I trust her and so do you, it’s someone you know.” “Ok, yes I have a minute or two.” “We will be there in a minute or two, as soon as she finishes getting dressed.” I close the link just as she comes out of the

room. “Dad says he has a couple of minutes, so let’s go.” She nods and we head to dad’s office.

DRAKE: I am curious, after getting that link from James, who my new daughter-in-law will be. I don’t have long to wait to

find out. The knock comes. “Enter.” The door opens and James and Janica walk into my office. Wow I was not expecting

that one. “Janica welcome to the family.” I say to her. “Thank you, alpha Drake.” She says. “No need to be formal, we are

family now.” I say to her. She nods, in understanding. I turn to my son. “What’s on your mind James?” I ask him. “I want

to know what the plan is for Jessie, and what is up with Keska?” He gets right to the point. I am glad he is learning finally.

“Jessie is spending the nights in the cells. She will be let out for the festivities during the day, under watch, not under

guard, but under watch. As for Keska, I don't think I understand what it is you are asking about." I say to him. "There is

something different about her, something seems off with her." He says to me. "Ahh. I will tell you, but you both will not

say a word, not even to Wyatt, not yet anyway. Do you understand?" they both nod in agreement. "Your sister has her wolf, but she is not just any ordinary wolf, she is a hybrid, she is wolf and phase elemental, like your grandfather." "Wow! I was not expecting that!" He says a little in shock. "Isn't she too young to have her wolf." Janica asked. "She is, but do to

the trauma of her stabbing, and the double rejection her wolf appeared early." I say. "I'm sorry, but what double, I know

about your mother, but who else?" Janica asked. "Jessie." James says before I can answer. "Ouch." She exclaims both

James and I just nod our heads. "What is a phase elemental?" Janica asked. That is better left for Lilly to explain. He was

her mate, she knows better than anyone else." I tell her. She nods in understanding. "One more thing, I haven't asked

Janica yet, but if she is willing, I would like her to go through alpha training with me." James says as he is looking at her. I

see her face light up like a Christmas tree, and she is nodding her head to him. "I will see what the council says, it is up to

them, they don't normally take mates." I tell him. "But what happens if we should find our mate there? They wouldn't

kick one of us out, would they?" He asked. "I don't know. I will have to ask like I said." I tell him. And "Now if that is all,

let's go eat." We all get up to leave the office and go down for breakfast. I link Carla. \*"James has his mate, and it's

someone we know." "How does he know; he has not shifted yet." "Yes but she has, it's Janica." "Oh lovely! I am so happy

for them." "Me too, where are you?" "In the pack dining hall." "We will be there soon." "Ok."\* I close the link.

JESSIE: When I get to my room I take a hot shower, I don't think I will ever feel clean again after having to clean the cells.

I get out and go to my closet to access my wardrobe, I pick a variegated blue short sleeved tee shirt and leggings with

cross trainers, as I am unsure what today's event will be, but I still want to look my best, so I do a light makeup, just

mascara and pink lip gloss, I pull my hair into a high pony and head down for breakfast. I look around and I see that

several people have their mates; this has been a good mating ball so far. I notice that Star is mated to the twins from Cold

Moon, lucky b\*tch, she get two mates. Looks like Janica is glued to James, I wonder if she knew when we were there? I

see Colton has his mate, Leasha has found her mate, Josh has his. I can't wait to get to know if mine is really here. I

notice that 2 of the princes' have mates. I head over to Janica. "Hi." "Hi." "Are you James's mate?" I ask her. "Yes." "Did

you know when we were there?" "Yes, but I couldn't do anything or say anything because it was too far from both the full

moon and you're guy's birthday." She tells me. "Congratulations, I am happy for you." I tell her and give her a hug. She

hugs me back. "Thank you." She says to me. I also notice a tall athletic woman standing next to Wyatt, she has sandy

brown hair and light brown eyes. I make my way over to them. "Hey Wyatt." "Hi Jessie, this is Lexi, she is from Wolf Lake

Pack, and she is my mate. Lexi this is Jessie, she is twin to James, and the alpha's daughter." He introduces us. "You must

be older to know that he is your mate." I say to her. "Yes, I am 20. It is nice to meet you." She reaches out her hand to

shake mine. I shake hands with her. "Welcome to Blue Crescent Pack." I say to her. "Thank you." I nod at them and go get

something to eat and find my friends.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **- I watched as we were driving away to go park 85**

### **I watched as we were driving away to go park 85**

[ 1,148 words ]

JAMES: I see Wyatt with a pretty girl at his side, so I find Janica and head over to him. "Hey Wyatt." "James, this is Lexi

she is from Wolf Lake Pack, she is Delta born, and she is my mate. Lexi, this is James, he is the next alpha of Blue Crescent

Pack." He introduces us. I reach out to shake her hand. "This is Janica of Dutch Wood Pack alpha born, and she is my mate." I introduce her. The girls shake hands. "Nice to meet you, and welcome to Blue Crescent." Janica says to Lexi.

"Thanks, I look forward to get to know you as we will be ranked females together." Lexi says. Janica nods. "James, you are

going to have to figure out a beta, Star is mated to the Cold Moon twins." Wyatt tells me. "Yeah, I was kinda expecting

that, not the twins per say but her being mated outside the pack." I say. "Have anyone in mind?" he asked me. "Yes

actually, I was thinking of putting Mitchell in the beta position, then giving Frank Mitch's position and moving Pete to

Franks." I tell him. "I just need to talk with them about it, when everything is over." I say. He just nods. I look around to

see where Jessie is and who is watching her, and I see both Frank and Pete each sitting at a different table but where they

can see Jessie. Guess that answers that question. The next thing we hear, 'mate', twice. I look over and see that both

Frank, and Pete had found their mates. I was happy for them. Everyone in the Marquee cheered for them. I happened to

see Mitchell come into the Marquee and beta Pierce's granddaughter was with him. "Mitch." I call out to him. He heads

over to where we were standing. "James, you know Karen, beta Pierce's granddaughter?" "Hello Karen." I say to her.

"James, nice to see you again." I just nod. "Mitch I have a proposition for you." I say to him. "What's on your mind?" he

asked me. I nod in the direction of Star, "I'm going to need a beta." I said. "I would like it if you would take the position,

and with Karen as your mate the two of you will be the perfect fit." I tell him. "Thank you. Have you told your father yet?"

"No, not yet, I will let him know though, just know you won't be taking the position until I come back from alpha training,

so it will be a while. But until then, This is Lexi, she is Wyatt's Mate, Lexi this is Mitchell and his mate Karen, and Mitch you

are acquainted with Janica, Karen this is Janica, she is my mate." I made the introductions. The women shake hands.

KESKA: We head downstairs, and I turn to head into the pack dining area instead of going to the marquee. "Why are we

coming in here?" Trever asked me "It's just better that I stay away from my sister for a while, and I know that she will be

out in the Marquee playing queen bee. I just don't want to start any problems, so staying out of sight of her is the best

thing right now." I tell him. "I will link my brothers and let them know, they both have found their mates." He tells me.

"That is great, I would love to meet them." I say. "Good then you can tell me what the two of you were whispering about

earlier." He says. I just smile and shrug my shoulders at him. Telling him anything in a busy environment like this is not

the best and I would prefer Nana to be around when he hears my story. I watch as his eyes glaze over, so I know he is

linking his brothers.

TREVER: Keska has me intrigued; I link my brothers. "We are in the pack dining area, my mate has just informed me that

there is trouble between her and her sister Jessie, so if you wish to meet her, and Dutch's mate come inside, but don't make it obvious." I tell them. "And how do purpose we do that?" "Oh, I don't know, maybe through the garden. Anyone

that lives here will know about the garden, but those that don't won't even know it exists, so if you have eaten already

just tell your mates that you want to show them something you found, and come through the garden." "Smart." "Duh." I

close the link before they can respond with a comment.

BARRETT: I look at Trent and he nods at me. "Ladies have seen the garden?" I asked them. They both shake their heads

no. "Then please follow us, we happened to stumble upon them shortly after we got here, they are beautiful." I say as I

stand and hold the chair for my mate, and I see Trent do the same for his. "After seeing them, we were inspired to

incorporate the design into the palace gardens." I say. : I keep a watch as we leave the marquee and enter the garden

area. Making sure that the alpha's daughter isn't following us, but she seemed occupied with her friends and didn't pay

to much attention to us. We walk the women through the meditation maze and let them see the set up and the beautiful

flowers, then at the center is a Braided Benjamina ficus tree, about 5' tall. The ladies were very impressed with the layout

and the fact that it was done with flowers and not hedges was an even a bigger plus, because then you could see the

exits and wouldn't be as apt to panic if you got turned around or lost, you could still see a way out. I lead them to

another door that I hoped would open to the pack dining area. But I was off by a door or two, but I asked an omega to

help direct us to the dining room and he was very helpful. As soon as we enter Trever waves to us, and we head over to where he and Dutch are sitting.

TREVER: I raise my hand to wave my brothers over to our table. We make room for the four of them, by bringing over

another table and bumping it up to ours. Keska was giving us lesson signing as we ate breakfast, giving us the sign for

the different foods. My brothers jumped in right away, as all three of us knew some sign language. When we were done

eating, I introduce my brothers. "Keska, Mackinzie, Liam, these are my brothers Barrett, and Trent. Ladies, I am sorry I

have not been introduced to you other wise I would do the full introductions." I say to them. And they just smile.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 86**

[ 1,441 words ]

KESKA: I smile at Barrett and shake his hand and then Trent's, I turn to Rachell and smile at her "It is good to see you

again Rachell." I say to her and give her a hug. "You as well Keska." "How do you two know each other?" Trever asked,

"Rachell is from Nana's home, alpha Fredrick's daughter, we sometimes will go and visit, as mom's brother uncle Darrell

and his family hold the lead warrior position there." I tell them. I then turn to the other girl that is with them. "Hi, I am

Keska, this is Mackinzie, my little brother Liam." I hold out my hand to her. "I am Alisha, alpha born Dark Moon Pack." She

says as she shakes my hand. "Nice to meet you." I say to her. "Nice to meet you as well, the garden is beautiful." She says.

"Thank you, my great uncle Carson was the one that had it designed and planted in honor of his mother, great, Grandma

Kayla Grant Sutter." I tell them. "Dark Moon, then you must know Luna Kina?" I asked her "Yes, she is my dad's beta's

daughter.” She says. “I can arrange a reunion if you like, but you will probably have to go to her, as she is heavy with their

first pup.” I tell her. “I would very much like to see her again, as I wasn’t able to make it to the swearing in/Luna

ceremony when they had it.” She says. I just nod. I look at Liam. “When are you supposed to meet up with Betsy?” I ask

him. “Oh shoot, I got to go.” He says and takes off out the door headed to the kitchen. It’s the closest to where we keep

the bikes. I just shake my head at him. “Where is he going as a breakneck pace.” Trever asked me. “Every weekend he and

another student go to the pack seniors to help with odd jobs and household chores that they may not be able to do for

themselves.” I tell him. “He and Betsy actually took over from Mackie and me.” I say. “It helps to keep him busy and lets

him earn some of his own money, so he has a sense of worth and helps him understand the worth of earning his own way,

instead of having to rely on father all the time.” I say to them.

TREVER: “So what do you do now, if Liam has taken over for you?” I asked her. “Well Mackie and I were thinking of

getting jobs in the human town about a half mile down the road.” She says. “And that way we are earning our own

money as well, and staying away from Jessie, for me, and Wyatt for Mackie, and trouble.” “Are you sure that’s a good

idea? What about staying in the pack and getting a job, if that’s what you want to do.” I say. “Because we would still be

at the mercy of Jessie and Wyatt, no thank you.” “Besides, they wouldn’t notice, Mackie and I have been leaving pack

grounds for about a year now, to take aikido lessons, and if it weren’t for this last incident with Jessie they still wouldn’t

know. But father had us followed, so now he knows.” “What’s aikido?” I asked. “A form of martial arts.” She says. “When

do you go?" I asked her. "Usually in about a half hour from now." She answers. "I want to come with you, I want to see

you in action." I tell her and watch her blush. "I will have to get permission from the master." She says. "Go ahead, call or

text or however you need to contact him." I watch as she takes out her phone, scrolls through her contacts then presses

the phone icon.

KESKA: I call master Cho. "Hello?" "Hello Master Cho, this is Keska, my family is hosting a gathering and some of our

friends wish to come with me to watch a session, will that be, ok?" I ask him. "I do not mind as long as they can do so

quietly." He says "Thank you master Cho." "Welcome Keska." I hang up the phone. "Who wants to come?" I ask.

Everyone in the group answers in the affirmative. "Please remember we are going to the human town." I tell them. They

all nod in understanding. I link Liam. "Hey little bro, Mackie and I along with the princes' and their mates are going for

our aikido lesson at the dojo." I tell him. "Ok." He sends back. "How do you want to travel?" I asked them. "How do you

usually get there?" Barrett asked. "We take our bikes." I say. "Ok you take your bikes, we will shift and run with you, then

shift back just before we get to the town." Barrett says. Well, that takes care of not needing extra bikes for them, we just

need a few back packs. Mackie and I go get our Gi's and put them in our back packs, we each have room for 1 more set

of clothes, I grab a couple extra packs from the entry hall closet. We grab our bikes and meet everyone at the cope's

road. I show them to Nana's where they strip pack their clothes and shift. Mackie and I carry the back packs on our bikes with us, and head out. Once we get to where we cross the border, I tell them "If you need to let anyone know that you

are off pack lands do it know please, I don't want to be arrested for kidnaping the royal princes." I chuckle and watch as

the girls' eyes and Barrett's eyes glaze over, so they are letting their perspective people know what's going on. Then we

slide through the opening and get back on the road. Halfway to the dojo we hear wolves fighting, and then a scream.

"Trevor, you and Dutch stay with the girls, Trent and I will investigate." Barrett Says. "I am coming with you." Rachell tells

him. "Don't tell me no, I was trained for this, I am an Alpha, and 3 is better than 2." "I wasn't going to argue with you.

The rest of you stay here and be ready just in case." I sniff the air in a full circle I don't smell the tell tail sign of rouges, so

I am not too anxious. We hear wolves fighting, Trevor, Dutch and Alisha take up defensive positions around Mackie and

me. Then everything went quiet. We hear the group coming back and they have a woman and small child with them.

They both have a small suitcase, and they look scared and dirty. I get off my bike and go towards them slowly. "Hello, I'm

Keska." I say softly, I know they are wolves, I can smell them, but not rouges. "I am from the Blue Crescent Pack." I speak

softly to the woman. "You're ok now, no one is going to hurt you." I speak softly to her. "What's your name?" I ask her

softly. "Ailea." "What's his name?" "Joey." "Is he your son or little brother?" I asked her. "Son." "Come with us Ailea, you

are safe, we are going into the human town just up the road, we will get you and your son cleaned up and some clean

clothes to put on. Ok?" She just nods her head. "Alisha, are you ok with Barrett carrying her in wolf form? Just until we

reach where you will shift back." I asked her. Her wolf nods. "Thank you." I say to her. Then we start to move again. We

stop where the trees start to thin, and we can see the dojo. Mackie and I hand over the back packs for the rest of the

group to shift and get redressed. Then we walk the rest of the way over to the dojo. I go straight to Master Cho. "Master

Cho is it ok if my friend Ailea looks through the lost and found for some clean dry clothes for her and her son. They had

car trouble and ended up falling in the mud trying to check on it." I said to him. I don't really like to lie, but since I don't

know their story, it was easiest to make up car trouble. "Yes, take them to the back storage room, they can look through

the bins." He says. I walk back over to the group. "I told Master Cho they had car trouble. I am going to take them to the

back storage room so

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 87**

[ 1,296 words ]

KESKA: If a couple of you would please go and see if you can find under garments for them, I'm sure they would

appreciate it." I said and took out my debit card and hand it to Rachell. I then step closer to Ailea and Joey. "Come with

me and will see if we can find you some cleaner clothes." I tell her. Trent and Rachell went to the store. I took Ailea to the

back room. She was able to find a pair of sweatpants and a tee shirt for Joey and a pair of leggings and a sweater for

herself, I then took them to the locker area and showed them where they could shower, and I got them both a towel.

Rachell and Trent came back with 2 pairs of under garments for each of them. Mackie took the bag and my card from

them and brought them back to the locker room area. "Ailea, we have under garments for you and Joey, I will leave them

on the bench outside the showers." I tell her. Then Mackie and I change into our Gi's and get ready for class.

TREVER: I link my brother. "What the hell happened Barrett?" "Don't know the whole of it, but what I pieced together

from just what we saw, someone wants them, and wants them bad, there were 4 guys surrounding them and one guy was

dead. The 3 of us took the 4 of them with little to no effort on our part. She is scared whoever she is." He told me.

KESKA: Mackie and I walked Ailea and Joey back to the group and put them between the two girls. Then we took our

places on the mats for class. Our lesson ran for 90 minutes, and when we were done, Mackie and I went to change.

Coming back to the group, "We have a stop to make before heading back." I tell them. "Where?" Trever asked. "The

restaurant where Mackie and I will hopefully be working this summer." I say. "What for?" "To check on the process of

where our applications are at, and if we need to keep looking or not." I say to him. I turn to Ailea. "I have a place for you

to stay, you will be safe there, until we can sort things out for you." I tell her. "I can't put you in harm's way." She almost

whispers. I smile at her "You won't be, and you will still be safe at the same time, I promise." I tell her. We head out of the

dojo and over to the restaurant. Mackie and I go in. "Hi, I'm Keska, and this is Mackenzie, we were wondering if the

manager was available to talk to us." I say to the counter girl. "I will see if he is available, please take a seat in the waiting

area.” She says. After meeting with the manager with an affirmative start date for the next weekend we head back to the

pack. Once we cross back over on to pack land, I tell the guys to link their people to let them know we are back. I take

Ailea and Joey with me to get the car, and I talk to Nana. “Nana, I um have an issue, when we were on our way to lessons

today the princes’ helped a lady and her son from being hurt or even worse killed. I told them they could stay on pack

lands; I was thinking of putting them in the old hunting shack that Jessie was going to hold me in, just until we can find a more permanent place where they can stay and be safe and earn a living for themselves.” I tell her. “Keska you are

playing with fire, if your father finds out, you know there will be hell to pay.” She tells me. “Yes Nana, that’s if he finds out.

I am hoping that we will get things settled with her before the end of next month, she must have some family

somewhere, we can find out and send her to them, but until then they can stay in the hunting cabin, it is the safest place

for them, the patrols don’t bother with it, it’s on pack lands, so relatively safe from rouges, it’s quiet and she can catch

her breath calm down and help with where she wants to go, and what she wants to do.” I tell her. She just shakes her

head at me but then she nods. “Thank you, Nana.” “Don’t thank me yet, let’s just get her settled.” She says and I hug her.

After taking Ailea and her son to the hunting cabin and getting them settled. “I will be back later with some food for you,

you can hunt the small game in the area but try to stay out of sight as much as possible. The windows don’t open right

now because my crazy sister had them nailed shut, but I will get that fixed to.” I tell her. She just nods to me. I leave them

and head back to Nana’s, park the car and link Mackie “Do you want to run the obstacle course?” “Sure, what about the

guys?” “If they are with you bring them with.” “Ok.” I close the link.

JAMES: I link dad. “Do you have some time to talk?” “I can make time.” “Both Frank and Pete found their mates, so you might need to change up Jessies watch guards.” “I’ll get with Mitch on that, but he too has found his mate.” “I know, he

is standing here with us, but he is the reason for the topic, I will need a Beta, I want Mitchell, and with Karen as his mate it

will be the perfect fit.” “I have no objections, but nothing will be put into place until after your training.” “I know, and I

basically said as much to him and Karen. I was also thinking of promoting Frank to Mitch’s position, and Pete to Frank’s.”

I tell him. “We can discuss it more in detail after the ball.” He tells me. “Ok.” I close the link.

JESSIE: I watch as both Frank and Pete find their mates and cheer with everyone else for them. Then shortly after

breakfast was done mom comes out to the marquee. “Your attention please!” she calls out. “We have our first game for

the mated pairs, so if you have found your mate please come into the middle of the marquee and sit opposite your mate.” She gives the directions. The middle of the room starts to fill up pretty quickly, with the mated pairs. Then mom

comes over to me and hands me a sheet of paper, I look down at it and then at her. I knew we were going to do this, but

I just wasn’t expecting it to be me. “The staff will hand out paper and pens to you, my daughter Jessie will be reading

questions off to you, be as honest with your answers as possible, the only person seeing them will be your mate.” She

says. After a couple minutes and the omegas have passed out the paper and pens, she nods to me. I rise to the occasion.

“Hello, everyone, I’m Jessie Sutter.” I introduce myself. I look around and see that some of the others are standing around watching, so I improvise on the set up. “Those of you that are here to watch, you might as well participate in the first part

of this exercise. You will be able to give it to your mate when the time comes.” I say out loud. And watch as several more

people move to get pap

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 88**

[ 1,517 words ]

#1 What pack are you from?

#2 What is your favorite color?

#3 What is your favorite food?

#4 What is your favorite past time? (Hobbies.)

#5 What Color is your Wolf?

#6 How many children do you want?

#7 List 2 packs that you have family in.

#8 What is your dream vacation?

#9 What is your quiet place?

#10 Do you like to read?

#11 What bad habits do you have? (list 3 be honest)

#12 What is your worst pet peeve?

#13 What is your favorite flower?

#14 What is your favorite candy?

#15 What is your least favorite food?

#16 What is your least favorite candy?

“Now please exchange with your mates. You now have 5 minutes to study the answers before we go through these again,

but this time you will be answering them according to your mates’ answers.” I say. I am looking around and I realize that

the princes aren’t here, I link James. “I don’t see the princes’ did they leave?” I asked him. “I don’t think so, maybe they

are out for a run with their mates.” He says. I close the link. “Ok now that you have studied your mates’ answers, hand

back the papers and flip them over. I will then reread these same questions and let’s see who was paying attention.” I wait a couple more minutes. “Remember you are answering them according to what your mate answered.” I tell the

room. And then I start reading the questions again.

BARRETT: We get back to the Marquee for the tail end of the game. I link one of the guards that I see, that found his mate sitting at one of the tables. “What did we miss?” “Just a ‘get to know you’ game.” “Was it decent or was it stupid?”

“I’d put it somewhere in the middle.” “Ok thanks” I see him nod and I close the link. I approach the young alpha. “Mind if we join you?” “Not at all.” “I’m curious as to what we missed, we were letting our wolves get to know each other.” I tell

him. “Just an exercise in getting to know your mate a little better, in case you end up in the doghouse. If you get my

meaning.” He says with a half assed grin. I nod in understanding. “Can we still do it?” I asked him. “Sure, I don’t see why

not.” He says.

JAMES: I look around and I see a few others that were coming in late to the marquee, “Jessie, we have some late

comers, I think you should do another round for them.” I call out to her. “Sure, I can do that. So, for those of you that

have played please make room for the new couples coming in.” she calls out. I stand and say, “there will be another run

organized for after lunch.” “That way your wolves will also be involved in getting to know each other.” “Now I turn it back

over to my sister.” I say and make room for some others to take a seat.

Lost in the world of this story? Make sure you’re on [Novel5s.com](http://Novel5s.com) to catch every twist and turn. The next chapter awaits,

exclusively on our site. Dive in now!

JESSIE: I see that the princes’ have joined us for this round, along with alpha Camron and some of the other alphas that

have found their mates. Again, once everyone was settled and has their pens and paper I give the directions to the game.

Then I start reading the questions. It was fun to watch as they answered the questions, some of the expressions on some

of their faces were comical to say the least, but that was what this was for, to help break the ice sort to speak. I get

through the first set, “Now trade papers, you get 5 minutes to study your mates’ answers.” Once the 5 minutes were up.

“Trade back and turn them over.” I tell the group. “Now I am going to reread the questions, you need to answer them the

way your mate answered.” I say to the group. Then reread the questions. Once they were done, I had them compare their

answers. And again, it was fun to watch the reactions on their faces. “Remember this was just to help break the ice, and

introduce yourself to your mate, we will have copies of the questions for each mated pair, and in a year retake it and see

where you are.” I say to the room. I then start to mingle with everyone left in the marquee. I notice the youngest prince is

not here. I go over to the prince’s table. “Hi, I’m Jessie.” I introduce myself. “Hello, I’m Barrett, this is my mate Alisha from

Dark Moon Pack, my brother Trent, his mate Rachel from Burning Ember Pack.” He introduces me. I shake hands with

Alisha and Trent and give Rachel a hug. “Congratulations” I say to her. “Uncle Fredrick must be ecstatic.” She just nods. “I

don't mean to pry, but didn't the youngest prince come?" I asked, "He did, but his mate is young, and not able to feel

the bond yet, so he is just spending time with her." Barrett says. I nod my head. And continue to mingle. I wonder who

his mate could be poor guy having to wait.

\*\*\*\*\*

MACKIE: After I get the link from Kes. I look at the guys, they have not left our side since Keska got back from being

kidnaped. I am starting to wonder if they could be our mates. Wouldn't that get Wyatt's and Jessies goats. Ha! "Something wrong?" Dutch asked me. "No, Kes just wanted to know if we wanted to go run the course?" "Sure."

They both say at the same time. So, we headed over to Nana's.

LIAM: It was almost lunch when Betsy and I finished with our pack duties, we counted the money and split it 50/50 I took

my half stuffed it into my pocket and linked Keska. "Are you back?" "Yes. I am at Nana's." "Can I come to?" "Liam, you

need to ask Nana, not me." "But you are already there." "You can link her just as easily as you link me." "Fine." I close the

link with her and open one to Nana. "Nana, can I come over?" "Of course you can, my home is always open to my grand

pups, love." "Thank you, Nana." I close the link and head over to her house.

KESKA: \[Corla, is the prince our mate?\] I asked her. \[I am not sure, he could be, considering he has been with us the

whole time he has been here.\] \[I thought that you would know.\] I say to her. \[You are still to young, so even though

you have me I cannot be sure either.\] she tells me. \[He wants to know our story, why would he want that unless he was

our mate?\] I ask her. \[That would be a question for him.\] she tells me. \[Are you ok with showing him us?\] \[He will

have to answer the question of if he is our mate before we do that.}] She says. \[Ok. Thank you.]\ \[Of course, you know

that I will always be here for you.}] She says to me. I just smile, and head to the back yard to check the course. "Nana, can we use the bags today?" "Of course, you will need to help get it set up, though." She said. "Ok I will." I go to the shed

and start to pull out the bags. Then Mackie and the guys and Liam show up and I get them to help set the bags up along

with Stephen. Once the bags are up, I start them swinging and take my place to start my run. "Yeah, Kes you got this."

Liam calls out. I just smile at him. I have Nana start the timer. I hit the middle of the balance beam catch my balance and

time the swinging of the bags, take the jump and hit the ropes, start the swinging climb up the rope to hit the high poles

at about  $\frac{3}{4}$  of the way up pick up speed to keep the momentum and the height going jumping up the poles to hit the

target and shred it on the way back down to grab the ropes on the opposite side of the course swinging back towards

the balance beam, land the beam catch my balance and time the swing and come back to the center, to end my run. The

minute I step off the beam Nana stops time. I beat my last time by about 2.5 seconds. "That good? Right Nana" "Yes

dear." I nod at Mackie "Your up, we are just doing time runs today." I tell her. She nods her understanding. Mackie likes to

start at an end when she makes her run. She starts running the balance beam timing the swinging bags, hits the ropes

with a high jump

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

# I watched as we were driving away to go park 89

[ 1,497 words ]

KESKA: and starts the climbing swinging of the ropes, and hits the poles she was a little higher than I was, runs the poles

makes the jump and shreds the target on the way down jumps and grabs the rope and starts the swing back to the

balance beam, times the bags and crosses the beam. She ties my last time. "Good job" I say to her. "I want to try." Liam

says. "Go ahead." I tell him.

TREVER: Dutch and I watch as the girls run the obstacle course and then Liam runs it. I get a link from Barrett. "Where are

you?" "At Lilly's" "What are you doing there?" "Watching the girls run the obstacle course." "Any progress on learning

her story?" "Not yet, but I am hoping that she will tell me more." "Good luck." "Thanks." As Liam is running the course, I

go stand behind Keska and wrap my arms around her. "What are we going to do after lunch?" I whisper in her ear and

can feel the shiver that runs through her body. "I told Ailea that I would bring her some food, but I also want to bring

some to the orphanage." She tells me. "Do you always help the pack like that?" I ask her. "I try." I kiss her neck and watch

her shiver again. "Trevor are you, my mate?" she whispers to me. I can't help it; I kiss her neck again and whisper "Yes."

She nods. Keeping her eyes on her brother to help coach him. I then notice that her eyes glaze over. I wait when I see her

eyes clear. "Trouble?" "No, just a secret." She says softly. "Can't wait to hear it." I say to her. We hear a horn blare "What's

that?" I asked. "The lunch horn, we use it when there is a large group doing multiple things, to call everyone for the

meal." She says. "What gets used if there is a rouge attack?" I asked. "It's a higher pitched horn, to help disrupt their

sense of hearing." She says. I just nod my understanding.

KESKA: I call out to Liam. "Time for lunch." "Can't we just eat here?" He whines at me. "Liam, now you are sounding like

Jessie." I tell him. "I am not." He says. I just shake my head. "You know we have to go eat with everyone." "Fine, but that

means both you and Mackie have to eat with the rest of us too and can't go hide in the kitchen." He says. I look over at

her, and she and I both sigh and nod. "Nana, will you come to the pack house and have lunch with us?" I ask her. "Of

course, I will come and eat with you." She answers. We all head back to the pack house. When we get there, I link Sarah.

"Sarah, I will take any and all leftovers, I will make a delivery to the orphanage." "Always thinking of the rest of the pack. Of course." She sends back. I then overhear some people talking about the run after lunch. Sh\*t. I turn to Trever and pull

him with me as I link Mackie. "Mackie bring Dutch and come into the garden." I close the link. I head to the garden. I see

that Mackie and Dutch are going through a different door and we meet in the middle. I put my back to the main door,

and I sign (There is going to be a run after lunch, I need to get to the hunting cabin before they can get there, so I can

keep Ailea and Joey calm.) I turn to Trever. (You wanted to know the secret Trever, come with me. Mackie you and Dutch

will have to stay and cover some for us.) I hope that they understand what I just said. Mackie just nods to let me know

she got it. I look to the other two. They both nod. I take a deep breath, and head back to the dining area with all of them

following behind me. I get in line to get a plate, inside the pack dining hall, I know that the Marquee is going to be filled

with, all the guest, and still wanting to keep out of sight of Jessie I opt to stay in the pack dining area, knowing that she won't come in, unless she has to. I link Liam. "Hey little bro, I am going to need you to help Mackie and Dutch, I will tell

you a secret when we get done, but right now I need your help." "Whatever you need you got it." "Love you." "Love you

to, but you're scaring me right now." "No, little bro nothing like that, I promise."

TREVER: I link Barrett. "I am going to find out a secret, a rather big secret, but she seems a bit fidgety right now, we are

going to some hunting cabin, so she can help Ailea and her son." "Got it." I close the link.

BARRETT: I link Trent. "Trevor just linked me he said he was going to be finding down, to help them out." "How do you

propose to do that?" "I will tell them that we want to go on the run with them, but we have to get our mates, I will write a

note to the girls to go be busy maybe tour the training grounds or something in that regards to help them get ahead

start." I borrow a pen from one of the omegas, I scribble a quick note to the girls. (After lunch go to the training grounds,

I think that Keska needs some time to get something done before the run.) I hand it to my mate and then nod towards

Trent's, as a sign to let her read it as well. They both nod to me to show they understand. I take the note back and as we

finish with lunch I stuff it into a half full glass of water. We all get up and the girls head out and down to the training

grounds, I head over to where I see James standing. "Did you say that there was going to be a run this afternoon?" I

asked him "Yes, dad has the gamma set to lead this run, it will start in about 10 minutes." "My mate said that she wanted

to go on the run, but then she took off with Rachel, I will have to go search for her, can you wait for us?" I asked "Of

course.” He says. I nod my thanks and head out. I link Trever. I have bought you a little time, not much so make the best

of it.” “Thank you.” I close the link.

KESKA: I go directly to the kitchen and grab some containers and fill them with the leftovers and grab a couple of back

packs and put the food in them, I then head out to the garage really quick and grab a couple hammers and put them in

one of the back packs. I head back in and hand one backpack to Mackie. I sign, (take Dutch and Liam and go to the

orphanage, and make show giving them the leftovers, and tell them it’s from us.) She takes the backpack and grabs Dutch’s hand and grabs Liam and head out. I grab Trever’s hand and head to the back of the pack house and out to the

tree line. I can’t afford to be shy right now, I strip down, fold my clothes, and put them in the backpack with the food and

the hammer. \[Ok Corla, he is our mate so he is the exception to everyone else that might know.\] I tell her. I feel the

familiar push and she is standing in front of Trever. {You must hurry.} she tells him. After the initial shock he shakes it off.

Shifts into his Lycan. Corla picks up the backpack and we both take off with him staying close to her. We get to the

hunting cabin and shift back, get dressed, I go to the door. “Ailea it’s Keska, open the door I have some food for you.” I

call softly through the door. I hear movement from inside the cabin, and then the door opens just a crack, and then she

opens it farther to let us in. I hand her the backpack and watch as she takes the food out and starts to heat some of it up

for her and Joey. “There is going to be a pack run, so I need you to stay inside, I will be here, I am going to try and get

the windows opened so I will be here a while, so if they do come this way I will be here and will talk to them, they won’t

bother you. I promise.” I tell her. She nods at me.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## I watched as we were driving away to go park 90

[ 1,299 words ]

KESKA: "Is there anything that you need?" I ask her. "Just something to help keep Joey occupied." She says. "I will bring

stuff to help with that, the next time I come." I tell her. Again, she nods to me. I wait inside the cabin for about 10 minutes

before I take Trever outside and walk a little way away from the cabin, I don't want Ailea to hear us. "I know you have

questions, go ahead ask." "How is it that you have your wolf? What is she? How is it that she can speak, I mean in wolf

form?" I just chuckle at how he strung all the questions together in one. "Do you know what Nana's mate was?" I ask

him. He shakes his head no. "Papa was Phase Elemental; Corla is an Elemental Phase wolf. She uses my vocal cords to

speak, and as to why I have her, as my mate, you need to stay calm, as I tell you, I can't have you going off the deep

end." I tell him. "I know that some bad stuff happened, Lilly hinted as much." He tells me. I nod my head to him. "My

family could care less about me, except for Nana and Liam. After he and Lissa were born and turned 7, I was pretty much

on my own to take care of myself. James and Jessie would blame me for all the crap that they would pull, and I would get

punished for it. Then at Aidrian's swearing in ceremony and Kina's Luna ceremony, the Elder Mrs. Sutter slapped me, and

rejected me, then the next week in school Jessie rejected me, I accepted it, then at James and Jessie's graduation I

accepted Mrs. Sutters rejection.” I had a smile on my face as I recalled that memory.  
“What are you smiling about?”

“Nana, she just about shifted into Cinder, right there in the pack house.” “Oh wow!” I nod  
my head “What happened to

cause that?” “The elder Mrs. Sutter grabbed my arm and wouldn’t let go. She extended  
her wolf’s claws” I pulled up my

sleeve to show him my upper arm and the scars I had from her. He let out a low growl. I  
just stepped closer to him and let

my scent calm him. “What else happened?” “Jessie set it up so that I got stabbed.” That  
got another growl from him only

this time it was loud. “Hey, I’m ok, and Corla killed the two that actually did the deed.” I  
tell him. I rub circles on his back.

But his growl did alert the pack run. And I caught sight of a few of the pack members,  
and some others, coming close.

“No harm, keep to the run.” I called out. “Everything is fine, just a bit of frustration  
getting the windows unstuck.” I call

out again to ease the run. I can see them, then just turn, and keep going. “Now we  
really do need to try to get these

windows open, they were nailed shut by Jassie’s crew.” I say to him softly. He nodded  
to me, and we got to work on

getting the nails out so that the windows could open. We stayed working on the  
windows and whatever else we could to make sure that the place was weatherproof for  
Ailea and her son. And the run had gone back to the pack house. “You

should be in the clear for a couple of days, Wednesday is my brother, and sister’s  
birthday and they will probably have

another run then to celebrate them turning 18.” I told her. She nods her understanding.  
“I will come tomorrow with some more food, and some things to help keep Joey  
occupied and maybe even help teach him.” I say to her. “Thank you.” She

says softly. I nod at her. We walk out of the cabin and head into the woods strip down  
fold our clothes put them in the

backpack, shift and head back to the pack house. Again, Trever stays behind me on our  
way back. When we get close to

the tree line we shift back and get dressed. "What's your Lycan's name?" I ask him. "Havoc." He says. "Hello Havoc." I say

to him. "Hello beautiful." He answers me. "Are you ok?" I ask him. "No, but I will have to get over it. I can see now why

your little brother was the way he was the other night. Is she getting punished this time for having you kidnaped?"

"Father says he is punishing her, but I don't quite know that it will make a difference, help change her. Make her a better

person, I mean."

TREVER: After hearing Keska's story, I just want to tear this f\*cking pack to shreds. I defiantly don't want to have

anything to do with her sister, and I can barely keep it together, about her father. Her brother had better prove himself a

better person or I will make sure that we don't do business with them in the future. I don't know how Lilly could stand to

be here, especially if she knew. Which apparently she did. I definitely know now that I won't be able to stay away from

her. I will wait until she is 18 before I mark and mate her, but I am not staying away from her. I link Dutch when we get

back. "I know her story, and it's not pretty or nice, I am barely keeping it together, from shredding this whole damn pack

apart." "Need to let off some steam?" "Yes, or I will explode." "Will I do the trick, or do you need Trent or Barrett?" "I

think I am going to need Trent for this." "Ouch, ok, I will track him down you head to the training grounds." I just close

the link and head down to the training field.

DUTCH: After getting Trever's link I open a link to both Barrett and Trent. "Trever is in a bad way, and he needs to let off

some steam, he says to send Trent, but I think we all need to go, he said that Keska's story isn't nice or pretty, and he is

barely holding it together from destroying this entire pack, so whatever she told him has him furious.” “Did he share?”

“No.” “Alright we will head down to the training area.” I close the link. “Mackinzie, babe, tell me some of Keska’s story.

You don’t have to tell me everything, but I need to know what happened to her, Trever is going off the deep end.” I say

to her. “Short version, she was rejected twice, and stabbed, and every time the older twins screwed up they blamed Kes,

and she took the punishment for them, she has scars from one of the rejections, as it was her father’s mother that did it,

and she used her wolf’s claws to dig into Kes’s arm. Anything else will have to come from her.” That was a lot to take in.

“What about you, what’s your story?” I ask her. “Me? I just get ignored, I don’t exist as far as my family is concerned,

Wyatt is the golden boy and Demi is the princess, Kes is my only friend in this pack, well now her brother Liam.” She says,

like it’s an everyday occurrence. “Come with me.” I say as I hold out my hand to her. “Where are we going?” To the

training grounds, Trever needs to let off some steam and the only way for him to do that without tearing this pack apart

is to train with his brothers and me.” “Ok.” We head down to the training area.

[Previous Page](#) [Next Page](#)

[Feedback Book Request](#)

©Copyright

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

**I watched as we were driving away to go park 91**

[ 1,528 words ]

BARRETT: I link Trent directly. \**"You ready for this?"* "I have to be, or he will tear this place apart if I, or we can't get him

to calm down." "Let's get the girls and get down there before he does."\* I close the link. "Alisha, my brother and I need

to go help our youngest let off some steam, he found his mate, but she is underage, and he has a bit of pent-up

frustration happening." "Poor guy, of course, let's go." We head out.

TRENT: "Rachell, Barrett and I need to go help our other brother let off some steam, he apparently is not in a good place

at the moment and if we don't get him to calm down, he will tear this pack apart. Nobody wants that to happen."

"what's got him in this state?" "He found his mate, but she is underage." "Ouch." I nod my head. We head out to the

training grounds.

KESKA: After Trever and I got back I told him I need to change and clean up after working on the cabin. As I was in the

shower an idea hit me. Why not fix it completely up and rent it out as a mini vacation spot, it has some nice views of the

forest and it is quiet, and while I work at getting it fixed up no one will be going there but me and who ever I need to do

the work, it could be a source of income for Mackie and me. I will have to talk with her about it, and father too I suppose.

After getting dressed in shorts and a tee I head out to go find Mackie and the guys. I don't find them in the pack house

or in the marquee, so I link her. \**"Where are you?"* "At the training grounds, after you told Trever whatever you told him,

he needed to let off some steam, so he is taking on both his brothers and Dutch, so he doesn't tear the pack apart." "Shit

I didn't think he would take it that hard." "Apparently he did." "On my way, is Jessie there?" "I don't see her." "Let's hope

she doesn't show." "A men to that."\* I close the link and head to the training grounds. I sit next to Mackie when I get

there. After about 5 minutes I get a link from Liam. \*"Where are you?" "At the training grounds, Trever needs to let off a

little steam so several of us are here." "Ok, I'm on my way."\* He closes the link. I don't like to see Trever in this state, but I

don't know what to do for him. While we are sitting there, watching I open a link to Mackie. \*"What do you think of us

fixing up the cabin then asking Father if we can rent it out as a mini vacation spot, we could get extra money, I know that we would have to keep it cleaned if we did that, but it would turn it into something useful instead of it sitting there

empty." "It could work, if he was willing to let us have it."\* I nod and close the link and watch as the guys start their

training bouts. Liam comes and sits with us to watch. "Is he ok?" Liam asked. "I don't know love; I told him about stuff,

and I think he needs this in order to not tear the pack apart." I tell him. "I don't blame him, sometimes I want to tear this

pack apart." He tells me. "Liam, it's not the pack's fault, it solely lands on Father, Mother, James and Jessie, not the pack."

I tell him. We watch as Trever takes on both his brothers and his friend. He holds his own against them for a while, longer

than anyone here would have lasted, but then I could see that he was getting tired, he started making stupid mistakes. I want to make them stop but I stayed out of it. Finally, Barrett calls a halt to the training.

BARRETT: "You ok now little brother?" I ask him. "Yeah, at least I don't feel compelled to tare the pack apart now." He

says. "Good, because I wouldn't relish having to explain the devastation of one of the biggest packs in our territory by

one of our own, to mother and father." I say to him, and he nods. "When you have calmed down even more you will have

to share." I tell him, again he nods. I watch him closely, he is scanning the bleachers and his eyes land on his mate, and he

visibly calms and takes a deep breath. "Go on go to her, her scent will help." I say to him. Again, he nods. We all head

over to where our mates are sitting. "We need to clean up." I say, "There are showers in the barracks." Kes says and she

leads us to where we could clean up.

JAMES: I notice the princes are heading to the training grounds, so I follow them to see what is going on, and I see the

youngest one in the center of the others, he seems agitated and even a bit angry, I can feel it rolling off him from here. I

see Liam sitting with Kes and Mackie, so I link him. "\*\*Hey, what's going on? Trever seems pissed about something, did

someone piss him off, and we have to smooth things over with them?" "Well not exactly, but if I were you, I would not let

him see you right now, he just might take it out on you, and I don't think you would survive." "What do mean?" "He was

after Kes to tell him her story, so I'm assuming she did, how much I don't know, but you know your history better than

anyone else." "Oh shit." "Yeah, so as I said I would keep a low profile around him for a while."\* I close the link to Liam

and open one to Wyatt. "\*\*You and I are going to need to keep our distance from Trever and Dutch for a while. He was

pushing Kes to tell him her story, and I was just watching him, he withstood both his brothers and Dutch for a good 30

minutes before succumbing." "Oh shit." "Yeah." "Got it."\* I closed the link with him, and then I had to let Dad know.

\*\*Dad, I have a feeling that Kes told Trever her history, how much or just what I don't know, but he was just at the

training field, and he was taking on both of his older brothers and Dutch, and he stayed with them for at least 30

minutes. I was back by the bleachers, and I could feel the anger rolling off him, it was palpable.” “Just stay clear of him for

the time being, if anything happens, I will take the responsibility.”\* He sends back. I close the link.

LIAM: I link Kes. \**“What’s your secret?” “When we were on our way to the dojo, the two older princes’ and Rachell*

*helped to save a she-wolf and her pup, I put them in the old hunting shack that Jessie had me kidnaped to.” “Wow when*

*you say you have a secret you don’t keep them small do you.” “Nope. When have you ever known me to do anything like*

*that small.” “True but you’ve usually had to deal with Mimi or Jessie, and they never keep it small, or to themselves.”*

*“Well other than those involved, Nana and now you, nobody else knows. Plus, now Trever knows about Corla.” “So, he*

*pushed to know why, and you had to tell him something.” “Yes.” “James was asking about things, I told him that I*

*thought that you might have told Trever about your history, and that was why he was in the mood he was in, I also told*

*him he might want to keep a low profile for a while.” “It wasn’t all on James it was Jessie as well. But yeah probably a*

*good idea for him to stay out of sight for a bit.” “Are you going to the range?” I asked her. “I want to, because now I feel*

*like I need to let off a bit of steam.” “I will go grab our bows, and I will get Mackie’s too.” “Thanks, you are the best.”*

*“Only for you.”\* I hear her chuckle as I close the link and head to the pack house to grab our bows, and Kes’s arrows.*

*Then I head over to the Gamma’s and knock. Demi answers the door. “Hey Demi, do you know where Mackie keeps her*

*bow?” “Not exactly, but somewhere in her room.” “Ok, thanks.” I link Mackie. “Can I go into your room and get your*

bow?" "Sure, it's in the back of the walk-in closet." "Thanks, I will meet you at the range." I close the link. Head to her

room and straight to her closet and go to the back, sure enough there it was, I grab it and head out.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 92**

[ 1,416 words ]

KESKA: "How are you girls doing?" I asked them. "We are good, that was a bit intense to watch, but at least Trever is

calmer now." Alisha says. I just nod my head. "How about you, how are the two of you doing?" "Honestly, I feel like could

let off a little steam myself after seeing that. What about you Mackie?" I asked her. "I'm with you Kes. I need to hit the

range." She says. "Range?" the girls ask in unison "Yes, Mackie and I do archery, and Liam said that he would meet us

there with our bows." "If the guys are up for it, after they come out let's ask them." Rachell says. "Can't hurt." Alisha

adds. When the guys come out from the barracks, they come over to us. Each one wraps their arms around their mates

and just takes a deep breath in. "Keska was just telling us that they do archery, I for one would like to go watch them

shoot." Alisha states. "I didn't know you did archery; you didn't tell me that." Trever says. "Both Mackie and I shoot." I

say. "Well let's go see you in action then." Trent says. And we all headed over to the archery range. Liam is there with our

bows, I go in and rent the arrows we need, I head back out and over to the targets. We have both types, the scarecrow

type representing the human body and the regular bullseye type. I go work on the body type, leaving Mackie and Liam to

choose their targets. After the first few shots the rest of them want to join in. so we let them take turns using our bows

and shooting the targets. "What's the difference between having the two different targets?" Alisha asked. "I don't really

know, I like to think it's to let you get use to shooting at a person, like in real combat." I say. "Makes sense." Rachell says.

I just shrug. After about an hour of shooting, we head back to the pack house. Mackie, Liam, and I go put our bows away.

And then we head back down to the rest of the group.

JESSIE: I see the princes walking back with their mates, Liam, Mackie, and KES! No! I am starting to get the feeling that

either she or Mackie might be the youngest prince's mate. No. How can that happen, she is not worthy of a prince. Hell,

she wasn't worthy of Seth how can she be worthy of a prince. I need to find out. I link James. \*"Do you know who prince

Trever's mate is?" "No, I do not, just that she is underage." "I think it might be Kes or Mackie. That's not fair, she can't be worthy of him." "Jessie don't start anything, that is the prince you're taking about if the Moon Goddess paired them then

it's not for you to interfere, or judge plus we can't afford to have war with the royal pack. Stay out of it and stay away

from them! You already have punishment enough don't you? If you interfere with them, you will end up having more or worse, you could end up dead!"\* I visibly blanch at my brother's harsh words, he has never spoken to me like that before,

and I felt his aura slip through the link, which has never happened before either.

\*"Jessie!" "Yes, I heard you. I won't do

anything." "Swear it." "I swear." "I don't want to hear that you manipulated anyone else into doing anything either. So,

swear to me that you won't do that either." "I swear."\* I close the link. Could he really be right? I don't want to die.

KESKA: After rejoining the group, I turn to Alisha. "Would you like me to check on Luna Kina and see if she is up for

visitor's" I asked her. "That would be lovely, I would love for her to meet my mate." I take out my phone and call Adrain.

"Hey Kes, is everything alright?" he answers. "Everything is just fine, I was calling to check on Kina and to see if she was

up for visitors, I have a friend of hers here with me and she wants to see her, and also to see if Nana needs to come and

see her." "What friend?" "Alisha and her mate." "I will ask her." I wait a few minutes, and he comes back on the line. "Yes

to both." He says to me. "Ok, I will get Nana, and we will come to see you." "Ok sweets, see you soon." "See you soon." I

hang up and put my phone away. I then link Nana. "Nana, Luna Kina would like you to come to see her. There is a group

of us that are going to go see her." "Of course I will be happy to come see her." "Do you want us to come to you first or

do you want to meet us at their room?" "I will come to their room." "Ok Nana love you." "Love you too." I close the link. Nana will meet us there, let's go. I lead the way to Adrain and Kina's room. I knock on their door, I hear footsteps inside

the room, then the door opens, and we all enter.

ADRAIN: "Hello." I say to everyone. "Kes please make introductions, I have met Trever and Dutch already." I say and shake

hands with them. "This is Alisha, she is Kina's old alpha's daughter, and her mate Prince Barrett." I shake hands with both

of them. "This is Rachell, and her mate Prince Trent, Rachell is the alpha's daughter from Nana's old Pack." I shake hands

with them as she does the introduction. "Adrain is my cousin and the Alpha of Moon Rise pack." She tells everyone. I

show everyone into the sitting area, there is another knock on the door. I go answer it and usher in Miss Lilly. "We have a

full house so to speak." I tell her. As we step into the sitting room. "I can see that. Barrett, Trent, good to see the both of

you again." "You'll have to introduce me to your mate when I am done, Barrett." She says to the Prince. He nods in

understanding. "Now where is your Luna and my patient?" She asked turning to look at me. "I will be back in a minute." I

tell the rest of the group, and lead Lilly to the bedroom where Kina is resting. "Love, Lilly is here." "Thank the goddess." I

open the door and usher Lilly into the room. I close the door and go rejoin the group in the sitting room. "How is Kina?"

Keska asked when I got back. "She is doing good, just sometimes the pup can be a bit overactive, and it wears on her.

"I'm sure Nana will help." She says. I smile and mess her hair. "Hey!" I just chuckle. "So how is it that the Royal family

comes to a mating ball given by my uncle?" I asked, curiously. "Mostly because of Lilly." Barrett says. "How so?" "She is a

Brookes' after all, and we don't want to disrespect her." He says, "Not that we ever intend to disrespect any of the packs,

but if we went to every place that sent invitations to us we would never be home, and nothing would ever get done."

Barrett replied again. "Well, I am glad that I got to meet you here, and please know, that if I ever throw a mating ball, I

promise I will not send invitations, I would rather petition to have things done in the realm than throw parties any way." I

say with a chuckle. "What kinds of things were you thinking?" Barrett asked, "Well one thing I was thinking, was a training

task force, where the packs could send their elite fighters to get some more advanced training to help deal with rouges."

I say. "In that regards some of the smaller packs would have a better chance of holding out until help could reach them."

“You know that’s not a bad idea, and that would allow us to access the strengths of the different packs and be able to

help them to survive better.” He says. “Yes, and it would be a good way to network, to know what packs might have

problems with other packs, what packs are closest,

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 93**

[ 1,110 words ]

ADRAIN: to the smaller ones in order to help them, or how many small packs are close to each other to help each other

out.” I say. He nods, and I can see the wheels turning. I hear the bedroom door open. “Excuse me.” I go to the bedroom

to see my mate and Lilly come out. “Love?” “I am feeling better.” She says. I look to Lilly questioningly. “Acupressure, my

dear boy. I will come back in a couple of days to check on her.” I can only nod. “Thank you so much miss Lilly.” She huffs.

“Nana will do just fine. I am not like your other grandmother, the bitch.” I shake my head. I know better than to go down

that road, especially after the twins graduation. I take Kina’s arm and bring them to the sitting room where everyone is

waiting. As we enter Alisha comes over and hugs her. “It is good to see you again, and expecting.” “It is good to see you

as well. I wish you could have been at the ceremony, but I know when you are in line to inherit, you have to put the time

in and the work.” She just nods. I then make the other introductions. “Prince Barrett is Alisha’s mate, Prince Trent is mated to Alpha Rachell, from Lilly’s home pack Burning Ember.” They all come and shake hands with Kina as I introduce

them one by one. "So now I get to call you Highness." Kina says with a grin looking at her friend. Alisha growls. "This is

Prince Trever, and his friend Gamma born Dutch." Both of them step forward as I introduce them to shake hands with

Kina. "Gentlemen, ladies my mate and Luna Kina." I state. After the introductions were made Keska gets up and give Kina

a hug. "I'm am glad that Nana was able to help, so you can enjoy the ball now." She says. "I am too." After about a half

hour of visiting Lilly ushers everyone out. "That is enough for one day, I don't want my work undone." She states. And

they all file out. "See you at diner?" Keska asked Kina. "I am feeling better so I think I will be able to come for dinner."

Kina answers her. Keska smiles "We will probably be in the pack dining area." and leaves with everyone else.

\*\*\*\*\*

CAMRON: It was after lunch on Saturday, I had found my luna on the full moon. I wasn't going to wait till we got back to

the pack I marked and mated her that very night. We will do the formalities when we get back to the pack. We both

joined the run that was set up. Halfway through it we all hear a loud roar. I along with a few others from the pack went to

investigate. I was surprised to see Keska and a male standing outside a cabin. He was someone important, I could feel the

aura coming from him, not in a challenging way, more in an anger frustration way, and when she said what she did about

the windows, it made it believable, but I have a feeling that it wasn't the only reason, and the way he was acting I also

think he might be her mate, but I also know she is underage. I have a meeting set up with a couple of the other Alphas,

after the run. When we get back and cleaned up, I take my mate with me and meet up with the Alpha from High Crest

Pack. "Alpha Josh, I am Alpha Camron." I say holding out my hand to him. "Alpha." He shakes my hand. I then introduce

my mate "This is my mate Cortney, from Black Waters pack." "This is my Mate Krystal from Dark Forest pack." We shake

hands around and then find a quiet corner to talk business. "I am not one for small talk, so I will get straight to it." I tell

him. He nods for me to go ahead. "I have come up with a new way to extract more metal from the slag ore that gets

produced from the mining and processing, : I had a deal in place to send the material to a manufacturer to make

components for electronics, but the company bailed on me at the last minute. So, I am in need of someone that will

partner with me to make the components." I tell him. "I think we can help with that, but it will have to be tested for

longevity, and purity." He states, "I can send you samples so you can test them for both." I say to him. He nods, and gives me the address to ship the samples to. I then get on the phone and make the arrangements to get the samples shipped

immediately. As he gets on his phone to let his people know to expect a shipment of samples from me, and to test them.

"Once we have the results I will let you know, and then we can set up contract negotiations." "I look forward to it." And I

give him my direct number. "Have you heard anything on the Keska front?" He asked me. "No, but I hope that it gets

resolved." I say to him. "I do to." He states. We shake hands and head our separate ways. "Who is Keska?" my mate asked

me. I take her hand look around to make sure that no one is close to us, to hear what I am going to tell her. "She is the

middle child of the Alpha of this pack." "What happened to her?" "A lot, during the Alph/Luna swearing in ceremony at

her cousin's pack, her father's mother rejected her, then I heard through the grape vine that her older sister also rejected

her in school, then during a training session, whether it was deliberate, or an accident she was stabbed when the rouge

alarm was raised. She earned my respect at the swearing in ceremony, she actually gave me a black eye and bruised ribs.”

I tell her. “How did she do that?” “She takes Aikido, but to be fair to her, I probably startled her when I just grabbed her

from behind, she was just defending herself.” I chuckled as I recount the incident to my mate. “I will introduce you to her,

you may have thought that she was an omega because she is always helping in the kitchen, or with set ups, or clean ups,

but she does that to stay away from her sister Jessie.” I tell her.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 94**

[ 1,153 words ]

JAMES: I didn't like to lie to Jessie, but if it kept her from starting shit again then I would do it again, in a heartbeat. I do

love her, but I have come to recognize how bad and how wrong we were, she hasn't yet, and I don't know if she ever will.

And I don't know if Kes will ever forgive me, I wouldn't blame her if she didn't, but at least she hasn't rejected me, that at

least is something to be grateful for I suppose. “Janica, love, after the ball is over, I have to spend the next 2 months of

summer working for one of the pack members, I, Wyatt, Jessie, and a couple others were messing around and we broke a window, we collectively blamed Kes for it. I did come clean about it, but now I am working off the damages, even though

Kes already paid the price. I am taking responsibility for my actions, even though it's a year late." "Is this what you wanted to tell me about earlier?" she asked me. "Yes, so I will be busy for the summer, but I still want us to do the Alpha

training together." "I would like that as well, so I guess I will have to take my Luna classes while you are working off that

window." "Thank you for understanding." "Have you apologized to Keska yet?" She asked me. "No, I have felt too

ashamed to actually apologize to her. We used to blame her for everything, and looking back on things now, Jessie would

go out of her way to pull stunts to blame Keska for. I just went along for the ride." "But now you know you were wrong?"

She asked, "I do, but I don't know where to start, to even begin to make it up to her or how to apologize." I say. "I don't

think she wants you to make it up to her, but the apology can go a long way to help heal things between you two. It lets

her know that you know you were wrong, and you are willing to admit it, like a good Alpha should, and can also earn you

a bit of respect from her." She tells me. "I notice how she treats your dad; she respects him as the Alpha but not as her

dad." "Yeah, I found out that almost every time Jessie and I got her in trouble dad would use his belt on her. On the rare

occasions that we did get punished, we would be grounded, lose privileges, get our electronics taken away, even if we

had homework to do, we would have to go to the library and use the encyclopedias to do the research for it. But he

never hit us." "No wonder she treats him the way she does. After hearing that, I have lost a bit of respect for him." She

says. I can only nod my head. "James, just say you're sorry to her, and hug her. It will let her know you mean it, and if you

do it in front of Jessie it will show her that you understand you were both wrong, and maybe help Jessie start to

understand it too." She says in a soft voice. "Plus, it may just go in your favor with the prince." She says. Again, I nod my

head in understanding of her words. "I doubt Jessie will ever realize she was wrong to treat Kes that way, she is too far

under Mimi Sutter's influence." I say to her. "Well then let's just hope that she is mated to someone a good distance

from us, so as not to cause problems for Kes until she comes of age and goes to the Royal pack to live, Jessie would not

be so bold to try anything then." She says. "Let's hope not, I saw a little of what he was capable of earlier, I think Kes told

him stuff, and it felt like he was going to tear through the pack if his brothers and friend weren't there to distract him, he

took on all three of them no problem and held his own for at least 30 minutes if not longer, it was impressive and scary at

the same time." I tell her. "Come I want to start my classes tomorrow if your mother is up for it." She says. I link mom.

\*"Are you busy?" "Not at the moment, why?" "Janica would like to come speak with you." "Of course." "I will tell her,

thank you." "Any time dear, love you." "Love you to mom."\* I close the link. "Let's go." I say as I take her hand and head

to mom's office. On the way there, I link dad. \*"Dad, I just got a link from Jessie, I think we may need to revise your plan

for her." "Why is that?" "I think she is starting to put two and two together and coming up with the fact that Keska is

prince Trever's mate, she just linked me a bit ago and said that Keska is not worthy of the prince, she wasn't worthy of

Seth how could she be worthy of a prince. Her words, not mine." "What did you say to her?" "I told her to stay out of it. I

reminded her of the punishment she already had, and she would only add to it, or worse end up dead, if she got

involved, and I made her promise me she would stay away, and I also made her promise not to manipulate someone else

into doing her dirty work.” “Smart, good job. But you are right we are going to have to come up with another plan of

action for her.” “Where are you right now?” “On my way to mom’s office with Janica.” “Do you need to be there with

her?” “I suppose not, but I will check, and let you know.” “Do that.”\* I close the link. “Problems?” “I don’t think so, Dad wants to see me, unless I need to be with you and mom.” “I don’t think you would have to stay, just get me there and

broach the subject and then I should be ok on my own from there.” “Ok, I will wait and see what mom has to say.” We

reach mom’s office, and I knock and walk in with Janica behind me. “Mom, because I have to work the rest of the

summer for Mr. Rickman, Janica was wondering if she could start her Luna classes this week? And dad wants to see me,

so if you don’t need me for this conversation, I am going to head over to dad’s office.” “Go ahead dear, I think Janica,

and I can handle the Luna issue without you present.” “Thanks mom.” I kiss her cheek, I kiss Janica and leave

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 95**

[ 1,319 words ]

JAMES: I head over to dad’s office. I knock and wait for him to answer. “Come.” He calls out. I walk in, close the door

behind me and go take a seat in front of his desk.

DRAKE: “I take it that you didn’t need to stay with your mate and mother?” “Nope I wasn’t needed.” “So, what’s your

thoughts for a new plan for Jessie?" "Keep her doing what she is doing, then on Wednesday, if and or when her mate

steps forward to claim her, let them leave right away, so she can't cause problems." "That is letting her out of some of her

punishment." "I know but isn't it better to do that than possibly have her start a war with the Royals, and possibly get

herself killed by causing problems." "True, but I promised Keska that she would be punished." "She is being punished,

she is sleeping in the cells and having to clean them, just make her have to clean the worst ones, which will change her

punishment, but I also think it evens it out, when she leaves early with her mate." I nod I like his plan. "I think you should

be the one to tell Keska about the change, and I will handle Jessie, especially after what you told me she said." He nods

his head. I check the time and see that it is already time for dinner. "Let's go get our mates and head down for dinner." I

tell him. He nods. We get up and head to Carla's office to pick up the ladies and head down.

KESKA: We all head out of Adrian's suite and head down to the pack dining hall. "You guys don't have to join us; you can

go eat and mingle in the Marquee." I tell them. "Why don't you come to the Marquee with us?" Barrett asked. "Well in

part because we are underage, and I kind of have been banished from helping in the kitchen, as I am one of the Alpha's

daughters, I can't be seen as lowering myself in front of company. And as I don't wish to cause problems with my family, I

think it's best for me to stay out of sight of them as much as possible." I say. "But Liam is ok to be with?" Trent says. "It is

his choice to make, I am not forcing him to stay." I say to Trent. "I don't understand, why would anyone think that you were lowering yourself, if you are helping out in the kitchen?" Rachell asked. "Most of the members forget that I am born

to the Alpha family." I state. "She doesn't brag about it like Jessie does." Laim says. I just smile at him. "Plus, if Adrian and

Kina join us, I will get him to sign to us and help us get better, and that would be rude to do in the Marquee." "Are you

going to join us Nana?" I asked her. "You young ones have fun; I think I will return home." "Trever, may I have a word with

you please?" I ask him. He nods and takes my hand. I lead him to the family dining area; I look around to make sure no

one is in there. "You have a secret that only a few in this pack know about, the fewer the better as of now, so please, I

know they will ask you to tell them about me, but please keep Corla a secret. I fully don't understand her yet, so it would

be hard for me to explain her to others." I tell him softly. "Who dose know about her?" He asked me. Mom, father, the

pack Dr. Nana, Mackie, Liam, Uncle Carson, his Beta, Adrian, Kina, our Beta, Alpha Camron, and now you, and I know

Dutch has an idea about her, because of the pool incident, and if father had to tell anyone else, I don't know." I tell him.

"I understand, but I will have to tell them eventually." "I know, and I won't care, but right now, at least for the time being,

I would like to keep her a secret a bit longer." "Ok, I promise, just for you princess." He whispers in my ear sending

shivers through me. I can't help but blush, and he kisses my cheek. I take us back to the others. "Barrett and the others went out to the Marquee." Dutch says when we get back. I nod in understanding. I get in line to get food and find a table

that will accommodate all of us, keeping in mind that Adrain and Kina may be joining us. I get a link from James. \*"Where

are you?" "In the pack dining area, why?" "We, as in you and I need to have a chat about Jessie." "What about Jessie? I

have been keeping my distance, so there should be no problem with Jessie." "Calm down, ok, Dad and I have revised her

punishment. She will continue to sleep in the cells, and clean the worst of them, then if or when her mate steps forward

to claim her, dad and I thought that it would be good to let them go early, therefore getting Jessie away from the pack as

soon as possible, so she can't cause trouble." "Why would she be causing trouble? I have stayed away from her." "She

saw the princes' with you and Mackie earlier today and she started to throw a fit about it." "So just tell her that I was

being a gracious host and was showing them around the pack and the different activities we have to offer the pack

members." "I didn't think of that, but it's a bit late for it now." "Well, if father wasn't so afraid that his reputation would

take a hit, I would be in the kitchen helping instead of trying to hide from Jessie just to keep the peace." "I didn't link you

to start a fight Kes, but we do need to talk, I will come find you later."\* I close the link. "Problems?" Trever asked.

"Nothing that I can't handle. Just typical family issues." Just then Adrian and Kina join us for dinner. I do get Adrain to

sign for us throughout dinner to help teach us more. After dinner I head into the kitchen and talk with Sarah. "I want to

take the leftovers to the orphanage again Sarah." I tell her. "I would expect nothing less from you Kes." She says. I grab a

bunch of containers and start to pack the food in them. I grab a couple backpacks, load them up with the leftovers, give

Sarah a hug and head back into the dining area. "I'm going to take these to the orphanage" I say out loud, and I sign

(and to Ailea.) Dutch and Trever nod, Mackie and Liam say in unison "I'm coming with." "Jinks." Mackie calls out to Liam.

"No fair." Liam protest. And everyone starts to laugh at their antics. We head over to the orphanage and drop off the

leftovers and collect the used containers, I also collect some unused toys and color crayons from them then, we head to

the edge of the woods. Just inside the tree line they strip down fold their clothes put them in the backpack with the

empty containers, I look around to make sure no one is close. \[Corla, are you ready to shift?\] \[Yes, Dutch is trustworthy,

as he is Mackie's mate.\] I look at Dutch. "What you are about to see you must keep to yourself no matter what." I tell

him, his Lycan nods at me. I undress, pack my clothes with the guys and let Corla take control. I feel the familiar push and

she is standing with them in our wolf form. Havoc nuzzles her and she him.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 96**

[ 4,432 words ]

KESKA: Dutch's beast shakes its head like he is trying to clear it. {I will explain when we get to the cabin.} She tells

him. Dutch's Lycan picks up Mackie, and Havoc picks up Liam, I/Corla pick up the backpacks and we take off through the woods to the cabin. I stop just inside the tree line and shift back, I take our clothes out of the backpack, I get dressed and

hand the guys their clothes. I can't help but check out Trever. "Like what you see princess?" He says with a grin on his

face, and I blush. We hear the same question come from Dutch. I turn to see Mackie blushing as well. "If you guys are

done checking each other out we have things to do." Liam says. "And we have to get back before anyone misses us." He

adds. I nod. Pick up the backpack again and head to the cabin. "Ailea" I call as I knock on the cabin door. "It's Keska, it's

ok ." I hear footsteps on the other side of the door. Then it opens a crack. "It's ok., you're safe." I tell her. She opens the

door and lets us in. "I have some more food for you, and some things to help keep Joey occupied." I say as I hand her the

backpack and let her take out the food and toys for Joey. "Thank you, umm..." "Hey it's ok, if you need something ask."

"Is there a stream, or river close by?" She asked me. There might be a brook close, but I am not sure, I will find out, we do

have a lake, but it is closer to the southeast border." I tell her. She nods and looks a bit defeated. "What's the problem?"

"It's just I was hoping to give him a bath and wash the clothes." I walk down the small hall towards the back of the cabin.

I open a door and show her the shower, it's separate from the actual bathroom. "I know it's not the same, but it will work, for getting clean and you can use the sink to wash your clothes in. I am hoping that I can talk my father into giving

me this cabin, if he does then I will be able to get a washer and dryer in hear, but until those plans come together you are

still able to take care of yourself here." I say to her. "Is there anything else that you need?" I asked. "No, you have done more to help us than anyone ever has. I am grateful." "The next time I come I will try to stay a bit longer so we can talk,

and you can tell me your story, and then we can figure something out for you." I tell her. She nods. Then we busy

ourselves repacking the empty storage containers. We head out and walk back towards the tree line. "Ok Dutch I know

you've been dying to ask me questions, so ask." I say. "What kind of wolf are you? I have never seen a red wolf before." "I

am a hybrid, I am a phase elemental, I can control both water, which you have witnessed and fire. Now what I am going

to tell you both must stay with you, until Corla is no longer a secret. My bite can kill, not in the way you would normally

kill a rouge, just straight out kill, She bit two people the morning I got her, one turned to an ice statue, the other a pile of

ashes." I turn to Trever "They were the ones that hurt me, so that is why she did it." I say. "Is that why you have that

shimmer, for lack of knowing what to call it, around you." "I don't know Dutch, I have not seen her in the mirror so I

couldn't say, I don't know about a shimmer." "Well, I guess it's not really a shimmer more maybe like a rippling effect,

kind of like when you skip a rock across the surface of a pond, the ripples flow out from where it hits." He says. I look at

Mackie and Liam. They both nod at me. "That is exactly what it looks like." Liam says. I shrug my shoulders at him "I

couldn't say Dutch, as I really don't know, what I do know is that Papa was a Phase elemental and that is where I get it

from, but Nana would be the one able to answer some of those questions better." "And the fact that she speaks, she

sounds like the human cartoon, Scooby Doo, only in a female tone." He says. I nod at him. We get to the tree line strip

pack our clothes shift and head back. Once we get back and we get dressed, I take the storage containers back into

Sarah. "I brought the other storage containers back." I say to her "Thank you dear." She says to me. "Welcome." I say and

head out of the kitchen. I feel a link push from James. I open it. "Yes big brother?" "Where did you get yourself off to, I

have been looking for you." "I took some of the leftovers to the orphanage, then Trever wanted to take a walk." "Ok, but we need to have that talk, so please come out to the pool." "Ok on my way."\* I close the link. "James wants to have a

talk; I need to go meet him at the pool." I tell the group. "I'm coming with you." Liam states rather harshly. "I think I will

come with you to." Trever says. "Liam, no judging, I don't have any idea what he wants to talk about, it could be about

his birthday in 4 days." I say to him. "Yeah right, why would he want to talk to you about that? He wasn't here for yours."

“Liam he had to be on that trip, or it would have been a slap in the face to our friends and allies, especially after they

came here for the twins’ graduation.” I say to him. “Your sister is right on that count, Liam, as an alpha you need to

reciprocate in kind, or in some fashion to balance the scales, or it could be a potential for problems down the road, so it

is always best to reciprocate in kind when possible.” Trever tells him. Mackie and Dutch follow behind us. We get to the

pool.

JAMES: I have Janica with me, as I am going to need her support on this. I fear that Kes might feel that Jessie is getting

away without serving her full punishment, and maybe she is, but making her clean the worst of the cells, especially the

torch cells, I hope she can see that Jessie is serving her punishment. I would also like to meet her wolf, I think it would

be interesting to see her, and maybe learn a bit about her. I have the pool area closed so it’s just us back here right now,

and I have taken precautions to insure no one can intrude, or spy on us. I hear Kes, and I can smell the others, I should

have known that Mackie and Liam would be with her, what I wasn’t expecting was the prince and his friend. “I am here

James.” She calls out to me. “We are sitting back by the Pool, come join us.” I watch as they come around the corner. “No Wyatt?” Mackie asked? “Not for this, though I don’t like keeping things from him, dad made it explicitly clear, that no one

else is supposed to know certain things, not even Wyatt.” “Then are we supposed to go?” Mackie asked. “I have a feeling

you already know, as Kes tells you everything anyways, and I also know that the prince and Dutch are your mates, which

Wyatt also knows, but what he doesn’t know is that Kes has her wolf.” I say. And I watch as they all exchange glances. I

noticed that the prince didn't seem surprised by what I said, so he must already know. "I felt something off with you little

sis, so I asked dad, and he told me, as I am going to be the next alpha of the pack. I would like to meet her." I tell her. "I

leave that up to her, if she wants to show herself or not, I don't try to force her, or coerce her." She says. I nod. "What I

really want to talk to you about is Jessie." "What about Jessie." "Both dad and I feel that it would be best that on Wednesday after our shift, if her mate is here and he claims her,

[Previous Page](#) [Next Page](#)

[Feedback Book Request](#)

©Copyright KESKA: Dutch's beast shakes its head like he is trying to clear it. {I will explain when we get to the cabin.} She tells

him. Dutch's Lycan picks up Mackie, and Havoc picks up Liam, I/Corla pick up the backpacks and we take off through the woods to the cabin. I stop just inside the tree line and shift back, I take our clothes out of the backpack, I get dressed and

hand the guys their clothes. I can't help but check out Trever. "Like what you see princess?" He says with a grin on his

face, and I blush. We hear the same question come from Dutch. I turn to see Mackie blushing as well. "If you guys are

done checking each other out we have things to do." Liam says. "And we have to get back before anyone misses us." He

adds. I nod. Pick up the backpack again and head to the cabin. "Ailea" I call as I knock on the cabin door. "It's Keska, it's

ok ." I hear footsteps on the other side of the door. Then it opens a crack. "It's ok., you're safe." I tell her. She opens the

door and lets us in. "I have some more food for you, and some things to help keep Joey occupied." I say as I hand her the

backpack and let her take out the food and toys for Joey. "Thank you, umm..." "Hey it's ok, if you need something ask."

"Is there a stream, or river close by?" She asked me. There might be a brook close, but I am not sure, I will find out, we do

have a lake, but it is closer to the southeast border.” I tell her. She nods and looks a bit defeated. “What’s the problem?”

“It’s just I was hoping to give him a bath and wash the clothes.” I walk down the small hall towards the back of the cabin.

I open a door and show her the shower, it’s separate from the actual bathroom. “I know it’s not the same, but it will work, for getting clean and you can use the sink to wash your clothes in. I am hoping that I can talk my father into giving

me this cabin, if he does then I will be able to get a washer and dryer in here, but until those plans come together you are

still able to take care of yourself here.” I say to her. “Is there anything else that you need?” I asked. “No, you have done more to help us than anyone ever has. I am grateful.” “The next time I come I will try to stay a bit longer so we can talk,

and you can tell me your story, and then we can figure something out for you.” I tell her. She nods. Then we busy

ourselves repacking the empty storage containers. We head out and walk back towards the tree line. “Ok Dutch I know

you’ve been dying to ask me questions, so ask.” I say. “What kind of wolf are you? I have never seen a red wolf before.” “I

am a hybrid, I am a phase elemental, I can control both water, which you have witnessed and fire. Now what I am going

to tell you both must stay with you, until Corla is no longer a secret. My bite can kill, not in the way you would normally

kill a rouge, just straight out kill, She bit two people the morning I got her, one turned to an ice statue, the other a pile of

ashes.” I turn to Trever “They were the ones that hurt me, so that is why she did it.” I say. “Is that why you have that

shimmer, for lack of knowing what to call it, around you.” “I don’t know Dutch, I have not seen her in the mirror so I

couldn’t say, I don’t know about a shimmer.” “Well, I guess it’s not really a shimmer more maybe like a rippling effect,

kind of like when you skip a rock across the surface of a pond, the ripples flow out from where it hits.” He says. I look at

Mackie and Liam. They both nod at me. "That is exactly what it looks like." Liam says. I shrug my shoulders at him "I

couldn't say Dutch, as I really don't know, what I do know is that Papa was a Phase elemental and that is where I get it

from, but Nana would be the one able to answer some of those questions better." "And the fact that she speaks, she

sounds like the human cartoon, Scooby Doo, only in a female tone." He says. I nod at him. We get to the tree line strip

pack our clothes shift and head back. Once we get back and we get dressed, I take the storage containers back into

Sarah. "I brought the other storage containers back." I say to her "Thank you dear." She says to me. "Welcome." I say and

head out of the kitchen. I feel a link push from James. I open it. "Yes big brother?" "Where did you get yourself off to, I

have been looking for you." "I took some of the leftovers to the orphanage, then Trever wanted to take a walk." "Ok, but we need to have that talk, so please come out to the pool." "Ok on my way."\* I close the link. "James wants to have a

talk; I need to go meet him at the pool." I tell the group. "I'm coming with you." Liam states rather harshly. "I think I will

come with you to." Trever says. "Liam, no judging, I don't have any idea what he wants to talk about, it could be about

his birthday in 4 days." I say to him. "Yeah right, why would he want to talk to you about that? He wasn't here for yours."

"Liam he had to be on that trip, or it would have been a slap in the face to our friends and allies, especially after they

came here for the twins' graduation." I say to him. "Your sister is right on that count, Liam, as an alpha you need to

reciprocate in kind, or in some fashion to balance the scales, or it could be a potential for problems down the road, so it

is always best to reciprocate in kind when possible." Trever tells him. Mackie and Dutch follow behind us. We get to the

pool.

JAMES: I have Janica with me, as I am going to need her support on this. I fear that Kes might feel that Jessie is getting

away without serving her full punishment, and maybe she is, but making her clean the worst of the cells, especially the

torch cells, I hope she can see that Jessie is serving her punishment. I would also like to meet her wolf, I think it would

be interesting to see her, and maybe learn a bit about her. I have the pool area closed so it's just us back here right now,

and I have taken precautions to insure no one can intrude, or spy on us. I hear Kes, and I can smell the others, I should

have known that Mackie and Liam would be with her, what I wasn't expecting was the prince and his friend. "I am here

James." She calls out to me. "We are sitting back by the Pool, come join us." I watch as they come around the corner. "No Wyatt?" Mackie asked? "Not for this, though I don't like keeping things from him, dad made it explicitly clear, that no one

else is supposed to know certain things, not even Wyatt." "Then are we supposed to go?" Mackie asked. "I have a feeling

you already know, as Kes tells you everything anyways, and I also know that the prince and Dutch are your mates, which

Wyatt also knows, but what he doesn't know is that Kes has her wolf." I say. And I watch as they all exchange glances. I

noticed that the prince didn't seem surprised by what I said, so he must already know. "I felt something off with you little

sis, so I asked dad, and he told me, as I am going to be the next alpha of the pack. I would like to meet her." I tell her. "I

leave that up to her, if she wants to show herself or not, I don't try to force her, or coerce her." She says. I nod. "What I

really want to talk to you about is Jessie." "What about Jessie." "Both dad and I feel that it would be best that on Wednesday after our shift, if her mate is here and he claims her,

Previous Page Next Page

## Feedback Book Request

©Copyright KESKA: Dutch's beast shakes its head like he is trying to clear it. {I will explain when we get to the cabin.} She tells

him. Dutch's Lycan picks up Mackie, and Havoc picks up Liam, I/Corla pick up the backpacks and we take off through the woods to the cabin. I stop just inside the tree line and shift back, I take our clothes out of the backpack, I get dressed and

hand the guys their clothes. I can't help but check out Trever. "Like what you see princess?" He says with a grin on his

face, and I blush. We hear the same question come from Dutch. I turn to see Mackie blushing as well. "If you guys are

done checking each other out we have things to do." Liam says. "And we have to get back before anyone misses us." He

adds. I nod. Pick up the backpack again and head to the cabin. "Ailea" I call as I knock on the cabin door. "It's Keska, it's

ok ." I hear footsteps on the other side of the door. Then it opens a crack. "It's ok., you're safe." I tell her. She opens the

door and lets us in. "I have some more food for you, and some things to help keep Joey occupied." I say as I hand her the

backpack and let her take out the food and toys for Joey. "Thank you, umm..." "Hey it's ok, if you need something ask."

"Is there a stream, or river close by?" She asked me. There might be a brook close, but I am not sure, I will find out, we do

have a lake, but it is closer to the southeast border." I tell her. She nods and looks a bit defeated. "What's the problem?"

"It's just I was hoping to give him a bath and wash the clothes." I walk down the small hall towards the back of the cabin.

I open a door and show her the shower, it's separate from the actual bathroom. "I know it's not the same, but it will work, for getting clean and you can use the sink to wash your clothes in. I am hoping that I can talk my father into giving

me this cabin, if he does then I will be able to get a washer and dryer in hear, but until those plans come together you are

still able to take care of yourself here.” I say to her. “Is there anything else that you need?” I asked. “No, you have done more to help us than anyone ever has. I am grateful.” “The next time I come I will try to stay a bit longer so we can talk,

and you can tell me your story, and then we can figure something out for you.” I tell her. She nods. Then we busy

ourselves repacking the empty storage containers. We head out and walk back towards the tree line. “Ok Dutch I know

you’ve been dying to ask me questions, so ask.” I say. “What kind of wolf are you? I have never seen a red wolf before.” “I

am a hybrid, I am a phase elemental, I can control both water, which you have witnessed and fire. Now what I am going

to tell you both must stay with you, until Corla is no longer a secret. My bite can kill, not in the way you would normally

kill a rouge, just straight out kill, She bit two people the morning I got her, one turned to an ice statue, the other a pile of

ashes.” I turn to Trever “They were the ones that hurt me, so that is why she did it.” I say. “Is that why you have that

shimmer, for lack of knowing what to call it, around you.” “I don’t know Dutch, I have not seen her in the mirror so I

couldn’t say, I don’t know about a shimmer.” “Well, I guess it’s not really a shimmer more maybe like a rippling effect,

kind of like when you skip a rock across the surface of a pond, the ripples flow out from where it hits.” He says. I look at

Mackie and Liam. They both nod at me. “That is exactly what it looks like.” Liam says. I shrug my shoulders at him “I

couldn’t say Dutch, as I really don’t know, what I do know is that Papa was a Phase elemental and that is where I get it

from, but Nana would be the one able to answersome of those questions better.” “And the fact that she speaks, she

sounds like the human cartoon, Scooby Doo, only in a female tone.” He says. I nod at him. We get to the tree line strip

pack our clothes shift and head back. Once we get back and we get dressed, I take the storage containers back into

Sarah. "I brought the other storage containers back." I say to her "Thank you dear." She says to me. "Welcome." I say and

head out of the kitchen. I feel a link push from James. I open it. \*"Yes big brother?" "Where did you get yourself off to, I

have been looking for you." "I took some of the leftovers to the orphanage, then Trever wanted to take a walk." "Ok, but we need to have that talk, so please come out to the pool." "Ok on my way."\* I close the link. "James wants to have a

talk; I need to go meet him at the pool." I tell the group. "I'm coming with you." Liam states rather harshly. "I think I will

come with you to." Trever says. "Liam, no judging, I don't have any idea what he wants to talk about, it could be about

his birthday in 4 days." I say to him. "Yeah right, why would he want to talk to you about that? He wasn't here for yours."

"Liam he had to be on that trip, or it would have been a slap in the face to our friends and allies, especially after they

came here for the twins' graduation." I say to him. "Your sister is right on that count, Liam, as an alpha you need to

reciprocate in kind, or in some fashion to balance the scales, or it could be a potential for problems down the road, so it

is always best to reciprocate in kind when possible." Trever tells him. Mackie and Dutch follow behind us. We get to the

pool.

JAMES: I have Janica with me, as I am going to need her support on this. I fear that Kes might feel that Jessie is getting

away without serving her full punishment, and maybe she is, but making her clean the worst of the cells, especially the

torch cells, I hope she can see that Jessie is serving her punishment. I would also like to meet her wolf, I think it would

be interesting to see her, and maybe learn a bit about her. I have the pool area closed so it's just us back here right now,

and I have taken precautions to insure no one can intrude, or spy on us. I hear Kes, and I can smell the others, I should

have known that Mackie and Liam would be with her, what I wasn't expecting was the prince and his friend. "I am here

James." She calls out to me. "We are sitting back by the Pool, come join us." I watch as they come around the corner. "No Wyatt?" Mackie asked? "Not for this, though I don't like keeping things from him, dad made it explicitly clear, that no one

else is supposed to know certain things, not even Wyatt." "Then are we supposed to go?" Mackie asked. "I have a feeling

you already know, as Kes tells you everything anyways, and I also know that the prince and Dutch are your mates, which

Wyatt also knows, but what he doesn't know is that Kes has her wolf." I say. And I watch as they all exchange glances. I

noticed that the prince didn't seem surprised by what I said, so he must already know. "I felt something off with you little

sis, so I asked dad, and he told me, as I am going to be the next alpha of the pack. I would like to meet her." I tell her. "I

leave that up to her, if she wants to show herself or not, I don't try to force her, or coerce her." She says. I nod. "What I

really want to talk to you about is Jessie." "What about Jessie." "Both dad and I feel that it would be best that on Wednesday after our shift, if her mate is here and he claims her,

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 97**

[ 1,420 words ]

JAMES: we allow them to leave early. She is still being punished, dad has her sleeping in the cells, every night until Wednesday, and he has her cleaning them, I just changed it to her having to clean the worst of the cells, such as the

torture cells." I tell her. "Does she know that Trever is my mate?" She asked. I don't know whether she knows or not, she

asked me if I knew who his mate was, and I lied to her, I said no, I just knew that she was underage, and she was

suspicious, of it being you or Mackie, and she was not happy about it." I tell her. "Why are you telling me, it's not like I

have a say in what happens to her, I am just surprised that father actually is punishing her." She state emotionlessly. I am

at a loss. I don't know what to say to her, or how to comfort her, for what we put her through over the years. I can't really

stick up for dad because he made his own choice to not ask her, and I made mine to not take responsibility, so now we

both have to answer for our mistakes, and that's if she'll even let us. "I can't speak to that, and I am sorry for the shit we

put you through Kes, I really am, and I know I can't take it back, but I can do better going forward." I tell her. "You had

better, or you won't have the pack, understand I am not threatening you, but if Uncle Carson doesn't like what he sees he

will take it back." She says. I nod, understanding the truth of her words. I watch as I see her eyes glaze over. "Is there

trouble?" I asked her. "No, Corla just wants some meat snacks." She says. "Liam why don't you take Janica into the

kitchen and show her around it and bring out some snacks and juice for us." She said to our little brother. "Sure. Come

on Janica, I will show you where the good stuff is kept." He says as he takes her hand and leads the way into the kitchen.

\*\*\*\*\*

JESSIE: I won't expect that she could be his mate, I will teach her. I go into the kitchen and start to go through the

cupboards, finding everything I need, I get to work I wash the arugula, basil, red ginseng root, the maca root and the

white truffles and set about making a salad, I slice the roots thin, using the whole of the root, then I make up a dredge

for the oysters, I take the ginseng root powder, the maca root powder ashwagandha root powder mixed with a little flour

salt pepper set it aside, I will fry the oysters tomorrow, and chop them up and then put them on the salad. I dress it with

honey and balsamic vinegar. I cover the bowl and shake it up to coat everything. I then take Strawberries, I peel them, just

using the red outer flesh and the seeds. Cherries, Figs, and Cinnamon and make a smoothie. When I am done I place

everything in the back refrigerator. I plan on feeding it to Kes for the next 4 days, and by the time she is done eating all

that she will be so frustrated that she will want to jump anything that walks, and if he truly is her mate he will have to

take her, or she will literally jump anyone and then he will reject her too. I come back into the main part of the kitchen

just as Liam and Janica come in from the pool. "Hey." I say "Hey." They both say in unison "What are you guys up to?" I

asked. "James is having a meeting out by the pool, and he asked me to bring out snacks, and so I thought I would show

Janica where all the good snacks were kept." Liam says. "Why is James having a meeting out at the pool?" "I don't know,

but that is where he is having his meeting." Liam says. "What's it about?" "I think pack issues, because of Star leaving,

who might be Beta, that kind of stuff." He says. "Oh, well have fun." I say as I grab an apple and head back to the marquee, and wait until I have to head back down to the cells. I get a link from dad. "Jessie come to my office." "Yes

daddy.” I reverse my steps and head to his office.

DRAKE: I wait for Jessie; I hear the knock. “Come.” I call out to her. My door opens and she comes in and closes it behind

her. “You wanted to see me?” “Yes, I have spoken to your brother, and we have decided, that we are changing your

punishment, you will clean the torture cells in the morning, and when you shift, if or when your mate claims you, you will

be able to leave early with him. Do you understand.” “Yes daddy.” “Good, you will be taken back down to the cells at 11

tonight, and every night until you shift.” I tell her. She pouts at me hoping to get me to change my mind. “I promise I will

be good; I won’t do anything anymore; can’t I just stay in my room?” “No, you cannot, you thought it was funny that

your sister had to spend a week in the cells, you are getting off easy, you only have a few nights in the cells, granted you

have to clean them, but she had to work for 2 months for Mr. Rickman, consider yourself lucky that we are going to let

you go when your mate claims you, and not tell him/her what you have done here.” I tell her. “Yes daddy.” She says

sounding dejected. “You can go now.” “Yes daddy.” She gets up and walks out the door.

JESSIE: Now for sure she is getting that salad, and I will top it with pumpkin seeds, Pomegranate seeds, sliced almonds

chopped walnuts, and I am going to put dark chocolate in it and ashwagandha root power in that smoothie to. Bitch!

KESKA: Now that Janica is out of the way Corla takes some of the pool water, about what would fill a 5-quart pail, and

holds it over James’s head, then splash, she lets it go. I couldn’t help but grin at that. The rest of the group busted out

laughing at James. “What the?” “Corla wanted to see if you could take as good as you gave.” I tell him. “How is that even

possible?" He asked. {I am elemental I control water, and fire. I will wait for your mate to see you all wet before I dry you.}

She tell him. "Gee thanks Corla." {Don't be sarcastic with me, or you will stay wet for the rest of the evening, so long as I

am near water, you will not be dry.} she tells him. "Sorry." He says. I watch his eyes glaze over. I just wait. Liam and Janica

come back out shortly with the requested snacks. "What happened to you?" Janica asked James. "Corla happened."

James says. "Who's Corla?" {"I am Corla."} My wolf says. {"I wanted you to see him all wet. I will dry him now."} and just

like with Lim that time, she takes all the water that is soaked into his clothes and pulls it out and puts it back in the pool.

"Thank you Corla, I will endeavor not to be sarcastic with you in the future." James tells her. {"Welcome."} she says. "She

sounds strange." Janica says, "I mean no disrespect to you Corla." She is quick to add. Corla pushes forward some so that

both James and Janica understand that she is in control here. {"None taken, they say that I sound like the human cartoon

Scooby Doo, only in a female voice and tone, I do not know, as I have not heard this cartoon."} she says. "Can we meet

you?" Janica asked her. {"You have."} She tells her. "I'm sorry I meant to say, can we see you." {"If I show you, you will

need to keep me a secret, I will one day show myself to the pack, but I will not do so until Jessie is gone, I will not let her

hurt Keska again."} She tell them. "We understand

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

**I watched as we were driving away to go park 98**

[ 2,924 words ]

KESKA:

KESKA: I strip out of my clothes and shift, feeling that now familiar push as Corla takes control. She phases us out of the

room, and straight to Trever. Liam gets up and comes over to us and just starts to pet her. "I can't help it she is so soft." He says. Corla nuzzles him. Trever too pets her, then Dutch and Mackie come over to pet her. "Wow she is soft, softer

than anything I have ever felt before, and I have never seen a red wolf before either." Dutch says. Mackie nods in

agreement. "How did you get out of the closed room?" James asked. {"I phased."} she says. "Like Papa used to do." He whispers, with tears in his eyes. {"Yes."} She says quietly. "Can you do that with Keska too?" He asked wiping the tears

away. {"Yes."} She says again. Then she phases straight over to him and puts her head in his lap. He starts to pet her and

just lets the tears fall. "I miss him. Kes." He says. "I do too James." I answer him through Corla. "If we are missing him, just

think how Nana must feel, he was her mate." I tell him. "I know." He nods. "What else can you do?" He asked us. Again,

wiping away the tears. {"We can walk on water."} She goes over to the pool and walks down the middle, the whole length

of it. {"I can control fire, I would be able to walk through it, like I walked on the water."} "Can you conjure it?" He asked.

{"No. Just control, the same with water, control, but not conjure."} She answers him. Then she phases back to Trever, and

nuzzles him. He strokes her fur, curling his fingers in it. She licks his face. He smiles at her. "You are beautiful." He tells her.

She just rubs her head into him. "Thank you Corla, but I need Kes back, now so we can finish out conversation." James

says. She turns to look at him nods and phases us back into the changing room shifts us back and I get dressed and

come out. As we walk out, James says, "Please phase back to your spot. I would like to see that." So, Corla phases us back

to our seat. "You disappeared." He says. "I can't speak to that, I don't get to see that, what I see is like looking through water in a fishbowl, things are a little distorted, but I can see where I am and where I am going." I tell him. "Are you able

to take someone with you?" he asked me. "Don't know, I haven't tried." I tell him. "Will you try, for me?" he asked. I walk

over to Liam and take his hand and phase to the changing rooms and back. "Thank you." He tells me. "Welcome." "But

now back to Jessie." He states. "Do we even know if her Mate is here?" I asked. "Colton's mate's brother seem very

interested in her, I have caught him watching her every time she is around him." Janica says. "If he is, then he must be

waiting for her to be 18 and shift, before he steps forward to claim her." James adds. "Hopefully that is the case." I say.

"But that gives Jessie 4 days to pull something." Liam says. "I will endeavor to continue to stay out of sight from her." I

say. "But that's not fair to you, why should you have to keep dodging her!" Liam states with a bit of anger to his voice. I

get up and go hug him. "If it is going to help keep the peace then I will do what I must, and just pray to the moon

goddess that Wednesday gets here fast." I say to him. He wraps his arms around me and hugs me tight. "If anything

happens to you again, I don't care if she is my sister I will beat her ass bloody!!" He states. "Liam!" I scold him. "No! I

don't care." Then he turns and looks at James, "And you won't be able to stop me either!" he states with conviction. "I wouldn't try little brother, I wouldn't try." James answers him. "James! Don't encourage him with that kind of talk. It's

exactly that kind of thing that Uncle Carson won't tolerate." I tell them both. "Sorry Kes, but in this case I am with him

100%." James says. "Sorry love I can't fault him on that one either." Trever says.

MACKIE: "Face it Kes, I don't think that most of us here would fault him, and some of us would probably join him." I tell

her. "Jessie needs a wake-up call, what that is or will be I have no clue, but I hope she gets it and soon, or what ever pack

she ends up in is in for trouble." I state. She just shakes her head. "But it's late, and I for one am tired." I say. "Can we

have another camp sleep over?" Liam asked, looking at Kes. "I don't care." She says. "What do you mean, camp sleep

over?" James says with a bit of suspicion in his voice, looking at the prince, and Dutch. "Oh please, little alpha, do you

think anything would happen when the little one is around?" Trever say looking back at him and nods his head towards

Liam. "We gave our word that we would wait, and we will." He says.

"Well if we are going to have another camp sleep over then we need to go get Kes's room ready." I say. Liam is the first

one up and moving towards the door. We all chuckle at his enthusiasm.

JESSIE: Now I can't wait till morning, I am so looking forward to paying Kes back that I don't even care that I have to

clean the cells. It's 11 and I see the guards coming to escort me back to my cell and I see that Marla and Dedi are also in

tow. I great the girls with a hug, and head towards the dungeon, with a smile on my face. "Did you find your mate's" I

asked them. "Yes." They both say. Mine is a warrior from Harvest Moon Pack Marla says. "Mine is a warrior form Dark Waters Pack " Dedi says. "Congratulations" I tell them both. "Harvest Moon is Alpha Camron's pack; He seems to be a

good alpha." I tell Marla. She nods. "Sorry Dedi I have no clue about Dark Waters." I tell her. "That's ok, I am just happy

that I have my mate." She says. I nod my head. I am glad that my friends are getting out of here. I know that I will be

getting out of here on Wednesday myself, and I can't wait.

KESKA: We get up to my room, and just like the night before, with the guys there to help we get my room set up for the

camp sleep over. Getting the beds moved and the extra bedding from the hall closet. Sending the guys to go change,

Mackie and I changing and getting ready for bed, I didn't feel as anxious this time around, and when Liam opened the

door I just waved the guys in. We all got into our places, but before I could turn out the light. "Can you tell me about

Papa?" Liam asked. "I can a little, buddy, but he died when I was 4." I tell him. "How did he die?" I take a deep breath,

because if what I remember is correct, that will be one more thing to turn him against Jessie, and I really don't want to do

that. "It was a rouge attack; he was trying to save us." "How?" "We were playing hide and seek, Papa and Nana lived

closer to the wooded boarder back then, and we were told not to go into the woods behind the house, but Jessie didn't

listen, and she went straight for the woods. We smelled them before we heard them, then we heard Jessie scream, Papa

took off at a dead run straight to where we heard her scream from, he got to her before the rouges did, but he wasn't

able to fight to the best of his ability, because he had Jessie in his arms trying to get back to the house, what and or how

things happened I don't know, James and I were ushered into the house and into the safe room by Nana, and I think she went out to wait and watch for Papa to come with Jessie. Honestly, I think the only ones that truly know are Nana and

Jessie." I tell him.

I strip out of my clothes and shift, feeling that now familiar push as Corla takes control. She phases us out of the

room, and straight to Trever. Liam gets up and comes over to us and just starts to pet her. "I can't help it she is so soft." He says. Corla nuzzles him. Trever too pets her, then Dutch and Mackie come over to pet her. "Wow she is soft, softer

than anything I have ever felt before, and I have never seen a red wolf before either.” Dutch says. Mackie nods in

agreement. “How did you get out of the closed room?” James asked. {“I phased.”} she says. “Like Papa used to do.” He whispers, with tears in his eyes. {“Yes.”} She says quietly. “Can you do that with Keska too?” He asked wiping the tears

away. {“Yes.”} She says again. Then she phases straight over to him and puts her head in his lap. He starts to pet her and

just lets the tears fall. “I miss him. Kes.” He says. “I do too James.” I answer him through Corla. “If we are missing him, just

think how Nana must feel, he was her mate.” I tell him. “I know.” He nods. “What else can you do?” He asked us. Again,

wiping away the tears. {“We can walk on water.”} She goes over to the pool and walks down the middle, the whole length

of it. {“I can control fire, I would be able to walk through it, like I walked on the water.”} “Can you conjure it?” He asked.

{“No. Just control, the same with water, control, but not conjure.”} She answers him. Then she phases back to Trever, and

nuzzles him. He strokes her fur, curling his fingers in it. She licks his face. He smiles at her. “You are beautiful.” He tells her.

She just rubs her head into him. “Thank you Corla, but I need Kes back, now so we can finish out conversation.” James

says. She turns to look at him nods and phases us back into the changing room shifts us back and I get dressed and

come out. As we walk out, James says, “Please phase back to your spot. I would like to see that.” So, Corla phases us back

to our seat. “You disappeared.” He says. “I can’t speak to that, I don’t get to see that, what I see is like looking through water in a fishbowl, things are a little distorted, but I can see where I am and where I am going.” I tell him. “Are you able

to take someone with you?” he asked me. “Don’t know, I haven’t tried.” I tell him. “Will you try, for me?” he asked. I walk

over to Liam and take his hand and phase to the changing rooms and back. “Thank you.” He tells me. “Welcome.” “But

now back to Jessie.” He states. “Do we even know if her Mate is here?” I asked.  
“Colton’s mate’s brother seem very

interested in her, I have caught him watching her every time she is around him.” Janica says. “If he is, then he must be

waiting for her to be 18 and shift, before he steps forward to claim her.” James adds.  
“Hopefully that is the case.” I say.

“But that gives Jessie 4 days to pull something.” Liam says. “I will endeavor to continue to stay out of sight from her.” I

say. “But that’s not fair to you, why should you have to keep dodging her!” Liam states with a bit of anger to his voice. I

get up and go hug him. “If it is going to help keep the peace then I will do what I must, and just pray to the moon

goddess that Wednesday gets here fast.” I say to him. He wraps his arms around me and hugs me tight. “If anything

happens to you again, I don’t care if she is my sister I will beat her ass bloody!!” He states. “Liam!” I scold him. “No! I

don’t care.” Then he turns and looks at James, “And you won’t be able to stop me either!” he states with conviction. “I wouldn’t try little brother, I wouldn’t try.” James answers him. “James! Don’t encourage him with that kind of talk. It’s

exactly that kind of thing that Uncle Carson won’t tolerate.” I tell them both. “Sorry Kes, but in this case I am with him

100%.” James says. “Sorry love I can’t fault him on that one either.” Trever says.

MACKIE: “Face it Kes, I don’t think that most of us here would fault him, and some of us would probably join him.” I tell

her. “Jessie needs a wake-up call, what that is or will be I have no clue, but I hope she gets it and soon, or what ever pack

she ends up in is in for trouble.” I state. She just shakes her head. “But it’s late, and I for one am tired.” I say. “Can we

have another camp sleep over?” Liam asked, looking at Kes. “I don’t care.” She says.  
“What do you mean, camp sleep

over?" James says with a bit of suspicion in his voice, looking at the prince, and Dutch.  
"Oh please, little alpha, do you

think anything would happen when the little one is around?" Trever say looking back at him and nods his head towards

Liam. "We gave our word that we would wait, and we will." He says.

"Well if we are going to have another camp sleep over then we need to go get Kes's room ready." I say. Liam is the first

one up and moving towards the door. We all chuckle at his enthusiasm.

JESSIE: Now I can't wait till morning, I am so looking forward to paying Kes back that I don't even care that I have to

clean the cells. It's 11 and I see the guards coming to escort me back to my cell and I see that Marla and Dedi are also in

tow. I great the girls with a hug, and head towards the dungeon, with a smile on my face. "Did you find your mate's" I

asked them. "Yes." They both say. Mine is a warrior from Harvest Moon Pack Marla says. "Mine is a warrior form Dark Waters Pack " Dedi says. "Congratulations" I tell them both. "Harvest Moon is Alpha Camron's pack; He seems to be a

good alpha." I tell Marla. She nods. "Sorry Dedi I have no clue about Dark Waters." I tell her. "That's ok, I am just happy

that I have my mate." She says. I nod my head. I am glad that my friends are getting out of here. I know that I will be

getting out of here on Wednesday myself, and I can't wait.

KESKA: We get up to my room, and just like the night before, with the guys there to help we get my room set up for the

camp sleep over. Getting the beds moved and the extra bedding from the hall closet. Sending the guys to go change,

Mackie and I changing and getting ready for bed, I didn't feel as anxious this time around, and when Liam opened the

door I just wayed the guys in. We all got into our places, but before I could turn out the light. "Can you tell me about

Papa?” Liam asked. “I can a little, buddy, but he died when I was 4.” I tell him. “How did he die?” I take a deep breath,

because if what I remember is correct, that will be one more thing to turn him against Jessie, and I really don’t want to do

that. “It was a rouge attack; he was trying to save us.” “How?” “We were playing hide and seek, Papa and Nana lived

closer to the wooded boarder back then, and we were told not to go into the woods behind the house, but Jessie didn’t

listen, and she went straight for the woods. We smelled them before we heard them, then we heard Jessie scream, Papa

took off at a dead run straight to where we heard her scream from, he got to her before the rouges did, but he wasn’t

able to fight to the best of his ability, because he had Jessie in his arms trying to get back to the house, what and or how

things happened I don’t know, James and I were ushered into the house and into the safe room by Nana, and I think she went out to wait and watch for Papa to come with Jessie. Honestly, I think the only ones that truly know are Nana and

Jessie.” I tell him

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **I watched as we were driving away to go park 99**

[ 1,218 words ]

KESKA: “How can Nana stand to look at Jessie, if she was responsible for getting Papa killed.” Liam says. “We don’t know

that for sure Liam.” I tell him. “I don’t think Jessie remembers, and Nana doesn’t talk about it. It’s got to be hard for her

he was her mate, some people are surprised she is still with us, a lot of times when a wolf loses their mate it’s hard for

them to continue to keep on living, I for one am very grateful for Nana, she has helped me more than anyone else." I tell

him. "It's late, time for lights out." I say quietly. He just nods. I turn out the light and go lay down next to Trever, he just

wraps his arms around me, and I fall asleep almost instantly.

JANICA: "What is a camp sleep over?" I asked James. "It's a co-ed group of people sleeping together as a group, around

a campfire. So that everyone gets the heat of the fire, no tents, just sleeping bags and the fire. We did a summer in a

human camp once, and we went for a hike out in the forest and stayed the night, our camp guide built a rather large fire, He dug a pit about 2' across and a foot deep, put stones around the outer rim of it and then we all had to partner up and

go find fallen wood and sticks that we used for the fire." He tells me. "That sounds like fun." I say. "Maybe we can do that

with the kids in the orphanage, and the younger pups." I say to him, "It can help teach them some survival skills, if they

ever get caught out in a storm." I say. "Yes it is something to think about incorporating into training." He says. "But come

it's late, and I'm tired." I hold out my hand to him to go in and up to bed.

JESSIE: 5:30 and the guards are here to get us up to start our cleaning. I take the coveralls and the gloves and get to work

on the torture cells. I use bleach and a pine cleaner to scrub every nook and cranny of all four walls and the floor. It

smells horrendous, but when I get done cleaning I can at least breath without gaging. I wait for the inspection. Then once

that was done, I get escorted up to my room and left to clean up and get ready for the day. I hurry through my shower as

I want to get to the kitchen to get that smoothy made and to make sure that it's ready for when Kes comes down for

breakfast. I get the bullet blender out and put some ice in it and the other ingredients that I prepped last night and

through it all in the blender and pulse it until it's all broke down and then I blend it up nice and smooth, I pour it in a

glass over more ice add a couple strawberry slices to the top as garnish and wait till I see Kes and the rest of them come

down. I put a note on the smoothie with Keska's name on it. And I head out to the marquee, to get my breakfast and

start the day.

KESKA: I am up at my usual time of 7:30 I head to the bathroom take a quick shower and get dressed, when I come out I

noticed Mackie was up, I sign to her (your turn.) so as not to wake the guys. When Mackie is done, Trever and Dutch are

both awake. They too take turns using the bathroom and shower, by the time they are done Liam still has not woken up. I

gently shake his shoulder to get him up. once he is up I get the guys to help put my room back to rights and we go

directly to the pack dining hall, get a plate, and get in line to get breakfast. I get to the beverage station and one of the

omegas hands me a smoothie. "What's this?" I asked, "I believe it's a smoothie, it was in the kitchen with a note, which

had your name on it." She says. "Thank you." I take it and go find a table away from the entrance of the marquee. I wait

for Mackie to join me. The guys just come and sit with me. "You know you can join your brothers and their mates in the marquee." I say to them. "We could, but I would rather be with you." Trever says. I blush at his words; I don't know if I will

ever get used to him flirting with me.

TREVER: I can't get over the way she blushes, it is so adorable. "What's this, a smoothie for breakfast?" I asked her, and I

steal a spoon full of it, it tasted a little strange to me. "I think something is off in this." I say to her. I watch as she tasted it.

“Not my favorite, not super crazy about figs, but not too bad.” She says. “You can tell what’s in it?” I asked her “I like most fruits, so I try to pick them out when I have something like this.” She says. “Ok, so what’s in it?” “Strawberries,

cherries, figs, cinnamon, and honey in a yogurt base.” She says. I take another spoon full and let it sit in my mouth to try

and pick up the fruits she said were in it. I can taste the figs, and strawberries right off, but takes me a bit to get the

cherries and honey, but they finally come through. “Not bad I guess. Did you ask for this though?” “No, but sometimes

Sarah will make me one just because.” She says. “Is it always this?” I asked her. “No this is the first time for this one, but

she will mix things up for me to guess what she put in them.” She says. I nod. “So, what are we going to do today?” I

asked her. “Well, I want to go see Ailea, and try to get things sorted for her, and go to the range, and practice our aikido,

and maybe hit the obstacle course and get a driving lesson.” She says. “What would you be doing if this ball weren’t

going on?” I asked her. “Pretty much the same, except for the Ailea thing, and we would probably be working at the

restaurant, so that would take up most of the day.” She says. I nod in understanding. “You still haven’t told me what you

and Liam were talking about yesterday morning.” I say to her. “I hope your are good at signing because that is the only

way I will tell you, as nobody here but us knows how to sign, and what I say will get me into bigger trouble than Jessie is

in right now.” She whispers to me. “Well then lets get whatever you want to get and head out to go see Ailea.” I whisper

back to her. She nods her head. When we are finished eating Kes and Mackie stack our dishes and take them into the

kitchen. When they

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## I watched as we were driving away to go park 100

[ 2,552 words ]

KESKA: "Liam, pack duties await." I say, he nods and heads out back to the bikes. I turn to the rest of us. "I want to get

just a few groceries for them." I whisper to them. They nod and we head out to Nana's to get the car to head into our

shopping district. I link Nana. \*"Nana I am coming to get the car, I have a bit of shopping I need to do." "Do you need

Stephen?" "No Trever and Dutch are here with us." "Alright dear, just be careful, and drive safe."\* I close the link, and get

the keys from the hiding place in the garage, get the car, and head out for our day. I am drive to the grocery store, I pick

up eggs, milk, bread, cheese, and the camp set of salt and pepper. I pay for the items head back to the car and have Mackie drive back. KESKA: We get the car parked back at Nana's, I leave everything in the cold bag and pack that in the

backpack, then we head over to the woods in a leisurely manor in case anyone is watching us, it looks as if we are just

going to take a hike in the woods. I sign to them that I don't want to shift today and just walk. We get farther into the woods, and I make sure that I have Trever's attention, and I begin to sign to him. ("Mackie and I have a blood oath.")

"What!" he exclaims out loud. This is why I waited until we were a bit deeper into the woods. I stop walking and look at

him. "Sshh" I shush him. I then hold out my hand and show him the scar at the base of my thumb. ("This is what Liam,

and I were talking about, he wants to do it to.") ("How is it possible that the two of you were able to do this?") he signs

back. ("We are in the same pack, so we both answer to my father, but she answers to me first, then father, and as we both

get ignored it was easy.") I sign to him. ("But Liam doesn't get ignored so it won't be so easy with him, but he is

insisting.") I sign. ("Wait, What do you mean, Liam wants to do it too?") Mackie signs to me. ("He got curious when I got

stabbed why you knew first and nobody else did.") I sign. ("So, I told him, he promised to keep it secret, but he is

insisting on joining us.") I sign. I hear voices in the distance, and I stop to listen, the others stop to listen as well. I then

take off at a dead run, I need to get to the cabin before anyone realizes someone is there. The rest of the group start

running with me. We make it to the cabin, and I knock "Ailea" I call softly. She opens the door a crack and sees that it's me and lets us in. "How are you doing?" I asked her, she seems a bit calmer today then she was yesterday. She just gives me a small smile and nods. "Do you think that you can tell me what happened?" I asked her. I hand her the backpack and

let her put the things away that I bought her. She sets the pack on the table and pulls everything out. Then busies herself

with putting things in the fridge. Then with a sigh she sits at the table and looks at me. "The person that was traveling

with me was a dear friend, we grew up together, when I was raped he was the only one that stuck by me." She says softly.

"We left our pack because the Alpha didn't believe that his Gamma's third born would rape me, but he was obsessed

with me, why I don't know, I never talked to him, he was ranked, I am just an omega, I worked in a laundry, helping with

the drycleaning, so it's not like our paths crossed." She says with tears in her eyes. "Who were the men that were

surrounding you?" Trevor asked her softly. "Chad's goons." "What pack are you from?" I asked her. "Stone Claw." She

whispers. Just then we hear the voices from earlier, I get up, "stay here." I say to her and head to the door. I open it and

see 4 warriors walking towards the cabin, I leave the door just slightly ajar, in case I need to make a hasty entrance back

inside or the guys need to come out. All of a sudden I hear one of them say mate and head straight for the door of the

cabin. I hear mate from inside the cabin. I know better than to get in the way of mates, so I open the door a bit wider, and

let the warrior in. the guys stand back and let them see each other. I step in between the rest of the warriors. "Gentlemen,

let them get acquainted." I say as I close the door a bit behind me. The men look at me. "Who are you?" one of them

asked me. "I am Keska, 3rd born alpha of Blue Crescent Pack. What Packs are you from?" I ask them, as I smell two

different packs from them. "Midnight Sky." Two of them say. "Harvest Moon." The third one says. "Is the one inside from

your pack as well." I ask him. "Yes." He says. I nod. "I would like for you to link your alpha please. Tell him that Keska would like to speak with him, and have him come here." I tell him. "Who are you to request an audience with a sitting

alpha?" he asked me with a bit of skepticism to his voice. "Did you see your alpha with a black eye about 2 months ago?"

I asked him. I watch him pause as he tries to remember. "Tell you what, link him, ask him, and see what he has to say. I'll

wait." I say to him, as I watch his eyes glaze over. When he is done his attitude changed. "Well, did you ask him to come?"

"I did I will send him the coordinates." He says. I nod. "I am going to go check on them, please wait here." I say to them. I

head back inside. I see Ailea sitting at the table and her mate sitting across from her. "Ailea, are you ok?" I ask her. She

looks up at me and nods her head. "I am ok, but there will be trouble if I go with them, Chad won't stop coming after me." She says. "Hey, one step at a time, alpha Camron is on his way, and we will go from there." I tell her. She just nods at me. "How is it the you

know my alpha?" the warrior asked. "It's a long story, and I will let him tell it if he is so inclined." I

say. We only have to wait about 15 minutes and alpha Camron knocks on the door of the cabin. I go to the door and

open it all the way so that everyone can see inside. "Hi." "Keska, Mackie," he greets us with a nod of his head. "So,

what's going on that I have to come all the way out here?" He asked. "A long story, and one that I need you to keep

secret from father." 100KESKA: "Liam, pack duties await." I say, he nods and heads out back to the bikes. I turn to the rest of us. "I want to get

just a few groceries for them." I whisper to them. They nod and we head out to Nana's to get the car to head into our

shopping district. I link Nana. \*"Nana I am coming to get the car, I have a bit of shopping I need to do." "Do you need

Stephen?" "No Trever and Dutch are here with us." "Alright dear, just be careful, and drive safe."\* I close the link, and get

the keys from the hiding place in the garage, get the car, and head out for our day. I am drive to the grocery store, I pick

up eggs, milk, bread, cheese, and the camp set of salt and pepper. I pay for the items head back to the car and have Mackie drive back. KESKA: We get the car parked back at Nana's, I leave everything in the cold bag and pack that in the

backpack, then we head over to the woods in a leisurely manner in case anyone is watching us, it looks as if we are just

going to take a hike in the woods. I sign to them that I don't want to shift today and just walk. We get farther into the woods, and I make sure that I have Trever's attention, and I begin to sign to him. ("Mackie and I have a blood oath.")

"What!" he exclaims out loud. This is why I waited until we were a bit deeper into the woods. I stop walking and look at

him. "Sshh" I shush him. I then hold out my hand and show him the scar at the base of my thumb. ("This is what Liam,

and I were talking about, he wants to do it to.") ("How is it possible that the two of you were able to do this?") he signs

back. ("We are in the same pack, so we both answer to my father, but she answers to me first, then father, and as we both

get ignored it was easy.") I sign to him. ("But Liam doesn't get ignored so it won't be so easy with him, but he is

insisting.") I sign. ("Wait, What do you mean, Liam wants to do it too?") Mackie signs to me. ("He got curious when I got

stabbed why you knew first and nobody else did.") I sign. ("So, I told him, he promised to keep it secret, but he is

insisting on joining us.") I sign. I hear voices in the distance, and I stop to listen, the others stop to listen as well. I then

take off at a dead run, I need to get to the cabin before anyone realizes someone is there. The rest of the group start

running with me. We make it to the cabin, and I knock "Ailea" I call softly. She opens the door a crack and sees that it's me and lets us in. "How are you doing?" I asked her, she seems a bit calmer today then she was yesterday. She just gives me a small smile and nods. "Do you think that you can tell me what happened?" I asked her. I hand her the backpack and

let her put the things away that I bought her. She sets the pack on the table and pulls everything out. Then busies herself

with putting things in the fridge. Then with a sigh she sits at the table and looks at me. "The person that was traveling

with me was a dear friend, we grew up together, when I was raped he was the only one that stuck by me." She says softly.

"We left our pack because the Alpha didn't believe that his Gamma's third born would rape me, but he was obsessed

with me, why I don't know, I never talked to him, he was ranked, I am just an omega, I worked in a laundry, helping with

the drycleaning, so it's not like our paths crossed." She says with tears in her eyes. "Who were the men that were

surrounding you?" Trevor asked her softly. "Chad's goons." "What pack are you from?" I asked her. "Stone Claw." She

whispers. Just then we hear the voices from earlier, I get up, "stay here." I say to her and head to the door. I open it and

see 4 warriors walking towards the cabin, I leave the door just slightly ajar, in case I need to make a hasty entrance back

inside or the guys need to come out. All of a sudden I hear one of them say mate and head straight for the door of the

cabin. I hear mate from inside the cabin. I know better than to get in the way of mates, so I open the door a bit wider, and

let the warrior in. the guys stand back and let them see each other. I step in between the rest of the warriors. "Gentlemen,

let them get acquainted." I say as I close the door a bit behind me. The men look at me. "Who are you?" one of them

asked me. "I am Keska, 3rd born alpha of Blue Crescent Pack. What Packs are you from?" I ask them, as I smell two

different packs from them. "Midnight Sky." Two of them say. "Harvest Moon." The third one says. "Is the one inside from

your pack as well." I ask him. "Yes." He says. I nod. "I would like for you to link your alpha please. Tell him that Keska would like to speak with him, and have him come here." I tell him. "Who are you to request an audience with a sitting

alpha?" he asked me with a bit of skepticism to his voice. "Did you see your alpha with a black eye about 2 months ago?"

I asked him. I watch him pause as he tries to remember. "Tell you what, link him, ask him, and see what he has to say. I'll

wait." I say to him, as I watch his eyes glaze over. When he is done his attitude changed. "Well, did you ask him to come?"

"I did I will send him the coordinates." He says. I nod. "I am going to go check on them, please wait here." I say to them. I

head back inside. I see Ailea sitting at the table and her mate sitting across from her. "Ailea, are you ok?" I ask her. She

looks up at me and nods her head. "I am ok, but there will be trouble if I go with them, Chad won't stop coming after me." She says. "Hey, one step at a time, alpha Camron is on his way, and we will go from there." I tell her. She just nods at me. "How is it the you

know my alpha?" the warrior asked. "It's a long story, and I will let him tell it if he is so inclined." I

say. We only have to wait about 15 minutes and alpha Camron knocks on the door of the cabin. I go to the door and

open it all the way so that everyone can see inside. "Hi." "Keska, Mackie," he greets us with a nod of his head. "So,

what's going on that I have to come all the way out here?" He asked. "A long story, and one that I need you to keep

secret from father." I tell him. He looks at me and then lets out a hardy laugh. "What's one more secret?" he says. I just

smile at his word

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.